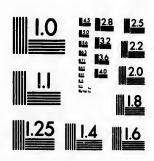


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSIER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503

STATE OF THE STATE

CIHM/ICMH Microfiche Series.

CIHM/ICMH Collection de microfiches.



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques



(C) 1984

Technical and Bibliographic Notes/Notes techniques et bibliographiques

The Institute has attempted to obtain the best original copy available for filming. Features of this copy which may be bibliographically unique, which may alter any of the images in the reproduction, or which may significantly change the usual method of filming, are checked below.			L'Institut a microfilmé le meilleur exemplaire qu'il lui a été possible de se procurer. Les détails de cet exemplaire qui sont peut-être uniques du point de vue bibliographique, qui peuvent modifier une image reproduite, ou qui peuvent exiger une modification dans la méthode normale de filmage sont indiqués ci-dessous.						
	Coloured covers/ Couverture de coul	eur			Coloured Pages de				
	Covers damaged/ Couverture endomi	magée	•		Pages dar Pages en	maged/ dommagé	es		
	Covers restored and Couverture restaure					tored and taurées e			
	Cover title missing, Le titre de couvertu							or foxed/ s ou piqué	
	Coloured maps/ Cartes géographiqu	es en couleur			Pages det Pages dé				
		ther than blue or bl e. autre que bleue	•	1, /	Showthro Franspare	-			
	Coloured plates and Planches et/ou illus				•	i print vai égale de		ion	
	Bound with other n Relié avec d'autres					suppleme d du maté		terial/ lémentair	e
	along interior marg La reliure serrée pe distortion le long d Blank leaves added	cause shadows or din/ ut causer de l'ombr e la marge intérieur during restoration ext. Whenever poss	e ou de la e may		Seule édi Pages wh slips, tiss ensure the	ues, etc., a best pos	nible rtially ob have bes	scured by an refilme age/ rtiellemen	d to
	lors d'une restaurat	from filming/ iines pages blanche iion apparaissent da était possible, ces p	ins le texte,	0	obscurcie etc., ont	s par un f	euillet d' s à nouv	errata, un eau de fac	e pelure,
	Additional commer Commentaires sup		nkled pages may	film slightly	out of fo	cus.			
This	item is filmed at the	reduction ratio ch	ecked below/						
Ce d	locument est filmé a 14X	u taux de réduction 18X	indiqué ci-des	sous. 22X		26X		30X	
						II			
_	12X	16X	· 20X		24X		28X		32X

The c

The in possil of the filmin

Origin begin the la sion, other first p sion, or illu

The last shall TINU which

Meps differ entire begin right requi meth The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

University of British Columbia Library

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. All other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or illustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol → (meaning "CONTINUED"), or the symbol ▼ (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:

L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâce à la générosité de:

University of British Columbia Library

Les images suivantes ont été reproduites avec le plus grand soin, compte tenu de la condition et de la netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimée sont filmés en commençant par le premier plat et en terminant soit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'iliustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la dernière page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apparaîtra sur la dernière image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole → signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole ▼ signifie "FIN".

Les cartes, planches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents.

Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seul cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.

1	2	3

1	
2	
3	

1	2	3
4	5	6

errata to

e étails is du

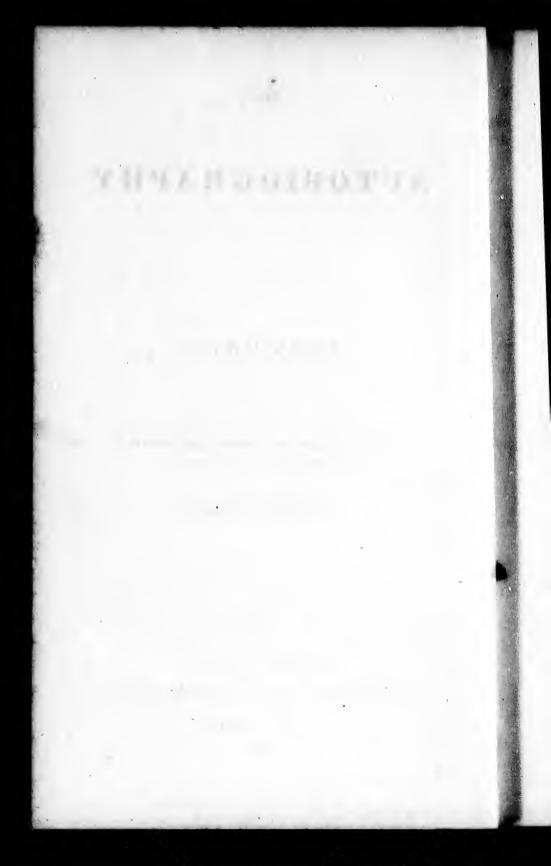
nodifier

r une

ilmage

peiure, on å

32X



AUTOBIOGRAPHY

OF

JOHN GALT.

"I WILL A ROUND UNVARNISHED TALE DELIVER."

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. IL

PHILADELPHIA:
PUBLISHED BY KEY AND BIDDLE.

J. CLARKE, PRINTER. 1833.

BE act Co

th ni de

lo

AUTOBIOGRAPHY, &c.

CHAPTER II.

An act of justice. Civility of the newspaper editors. Finishing of the Commission. Return.

BEFORE I proceed with my narrative, I must pause to do an act of justice. I had embarked with a strong prejudice against Colonel Cockburn, particularly in consequence of altercations we had together at the colonial office, when arranging the basis of agreement between the Crown and the Canada company. He acted for the secretary of state. But I now have no small pleasure in acknowledging my error; I found him the more I knew of him, an honest and intelligent gentleman with a zealous respect for his trust, and ever since our business was finished, a friend that I am proud in having known.

On my arrival at York, in Upper Canada, he had anticipated many things that were essential to our inquiries, in so much, that when the two other commissioners, whom private business had taken to Lower Canada, would arrive, and they were daily expected, we should be in a condition to begin business.

That evening we dined at the governor's, and every thing looked well. I anticipated a pleasant time, notwithstanding I felt my malady increasing, for I was well known by name in the province for my advocacy of the war losses, and perhaps

I owed something to my authorship. However, I had great reason to be personally obliged to the editors of some of the newspapers for their publications. Among others, I received a complete file of the Colonial advocate. With the editor I was entirely unacquainted, and as little aware of the character of his politics. A file of newspapers, however, was a present that called at least for my acknowledgment; but before sending my letter of thanks, which was written soon after I received the file, I turned the papers over cursorily, and here and there read a passage, which apprised me of the character of their politics, particularly a series of letters addressed to the attorney-general, intended to resemble those of Junius; but I could not even acknowledge the present, without noticing the coarseness, in such a manner, however, as to convey my opinion with some delicacy; and as the paper evinced superior local information, I ordered it to be regularly sent to me.

da

th

stu

na

m

I

th

se

of

th th

ar

bu th

th

ir

tl

n

e

I beseech the reader to recollect this circumstance, for what I intended as mere politeness, was afterwards construed to indicate a settled disposition in politics, and was to me a source of misfortune.

The inquiry of the commissioners went on regularly.

In consequence of my ill health, I went as little abroad as possible; but it was necessary to take our different meals at the general-house the commissioners had hired. Unless the party was a very particular one, I commonly went to bed, for one of the inconveniencies of the disease with which I was incommoded, was a great disposition to fall asleep suddenly. At the governor's table, one evening, during dinner, I was obliged to indulge my propensity; and another morning, at the board, the same sudden overpowering drowsiness attacked me. However, with the exception of the attorney-general's. house, I went with my colleagues to every place, and I was then only deterred from accompanying them by a severe attack of my indisposition. With this single exception I accepted every invitation, and I mention this particularly, to explain what afterwards appeared, as will be shewn, a singular allegation on the part of Sir Peregrine Maitland. Once, indeed, in

I had great
some of the
received a
editor I was
haracter of
a present
efore sender I receivhere and
haracter of
sed to the
ius; but I
t noticing
onvey my

for what strued to to me a

d superior

o me.

arly.

abroad as meals at a less the bed, for a less uddenly.

as obligation as the attacked

eneral's,
d I was
e attack
eccepted
explain
allegaleed, in

going from my lodgings to the commission-house I called at the inspector-general's, where several gentlemen belonging to the legislature were at breakfast.

When our inquiry was finished, we prepared to return home, by crossing Lake Ontario in the evening. Those who intended to proceed to the Lower Province were detained for a day or two, but the party destined for England lost no time in their journey.—I solicit particular attention to this circumstance, and to an incident in itself of no apparent importance, namely, requesting Mr. Malcolm, the secretary to the commission, to call at the newspaper offices, and pay for those that I had received after my arrival. I also begged him to call at the Colonial Advocate's office, and direct Mr. Mackenzie to send his paper regularly to me, in London. I did this because of the file of newspapers he had sent me, and from observing that the Colonial Advocate contained more advertisements for the sale of land than any other paper in the province.

In this business I was solely actuated by my reluctance arising from the feeling of disease, to be in the open air.

By some accident, I never learned how Mr. Malcolm was prevented from going to the office of the Colonial Advocate, but it will be seen hereafter the very nefarious use made of that circumstance.

On the day, however, on which the commissioners signed their report, we had several strangers to dinner. It happened to be my birth-day, and I determined to punish my colleagues in retaliation for a difference of opinion on several points that had prevailed among us, for I was apprehensive we might not all part such good friends as our unanimity at last indicated. Accordingly, while the secretary was preparing the parchments for signature, being in the board-room by myself, I scribbled a travestie on Cowper's Ode to the Memory of Kempenfeldt, on the scattering of the commissioners. I do not recollect it particularly, but it was a description of each commissioner. The stanza on Colonel Cockburn was good:—

Turkeys and tongues Have fallen cent. perc ent., And not a goose is spoken of, Since Colonel Cockburn went.

Sir John Harvey assisted me to make copies, which with great formality were sealed, and I carried them to the dinner table.

When the cloth was removed and the decanters set, I made a short speech as gravely as I could, stating, that at the board their conduct was such that I could not soon forget it, especially the manner in which unanimity was at last obtained, but conscious of my inability to speak what I felt, I had expressed myself on the subject to each commissioner similarly in a separate letter.

My address excited universal consternation, the more especially as I requested permission to leave the room. It was granted in silence, and I soon heard a peal of laughter at the result. Without some trick of this sort, I am convinced we should have parted rather uncomfortably, but all was put to rights, and we separated in good humour.

Night and day those destined for England travelled to Albany, and accomplished the journey in a much shorter time than it ever was remembered to have been performed.—We got on board the steamer there at once, arrived safe at New York, and had a passage without accident from that city to Liverpool.

in

C

in be

pa

Т

th

m

te

di

C

ni la

ac

to

W

ti

it

Among the passengers to England, were several gentlemen from Virginia, on their way to make the tour of Europe. They were genteel men, and we recollected how well we had been treated by the Custom House officers at New York; accordingly, we begged the tide surveyor at Liverpool, to pass their baggage without examination, for between the two countries at that period, it seemed judicions to foster a conciliatory spirit.

We then made the best of our way to London, where Colonel Cockburn, our chief Commissioner, delivered the coach load of documents, we had brought, to the Colonial Office, and as I expected no objection would be made to our report, I remained at the coach inn, with the intention of going to my family in Scotland, but it was destined to be otherwise.

ich with e dinner

t, I made the board especialined, but xpressed in a se-

e especiIt was
er at the
aced we
as put to

d to Alter time d.—We at New t city to

gentler of Euow well
at New
iverpool,
een the
foster a

re Coloe coach ice, and rt, I remy fa-

CHAPTER III.

A proposal. The Clergy Corporation of Upper Canada interfere. The commissioners put on their defence. A new bargain. Dextrous Manæuvre of Archdeacon—Struchan. Appointed to go to America.

Two or three days after our arrival, Colonel Cockburn called on me to urge that the Company should give up the clergy reserves, but I explained that it could not be done, because the agreement for these reserves was one of the grounds which had induced subscribers to supply the capital.

His manner completely convinced me that his call was not without an object, and after he went away, I had no doubt in my own mind of his being sent to sound my disposition on the subject, especially as the Attorney General of Upper Canada had come home, and it was rumoured that the clergy intended to stir heaven and earth to get the award set aside, before even it was known what the award would be.

Having failed with me, a representation was made on the part of the clergy, by the Attorney General of Upper Canada. The paper was drawn up with great skill and ability, but as the commissioners were appointed arbitrators, it appeared to me that by adhering to that character, we should get the better of the Attorney-General. On this, however, there was a difference of opinion amongst us. The commissioners, in consequence, who had come to England, waited on the Colonial Secretary in a body, and requested the appointment of a law adviser. In this, however, I stood alone upon my character as an arbitrator, and refused to consider myself as amenable to the Secretary of State, unless delinquency and corruption were imputed: in that case I would insist on a public investigation. My colleagues, however, chose a middle course, and it was left to Sir Giffin Wilson, to decide if we had fulfilled Vol. II. B

our instructions. In this proceeding the Canada Company took a very wise course, suggested by their governor, Mr. Bosanquet. They refused to have any thing to do with the dispute, and said, they were content to abide by the award.

A very troublesome business, of several months, was the consequence, but the Company was the firm, and at last a much more elaborate investigation was directed to take place before Mr. Robert Grant,—the present judge advocate,—to answer the charges brought against the commissioners by the attorney-general of Upper Canada.

The talents of Mr. Grant require no eulogium; and in a report, extending to several hundred pages, he completely established their vindication. But it was believed not to have satisfied the Canadian Clergy, and thus, before Mr. Grant's eloquent and able paper was acknowledged in the colonial office, it was left to Dr. Strachan, for the clergy, and myself, privately to try if he could make a satisfactory agreement to which Earl Bathurst and the Company would accede. This was soon done, and the second agreement of the Canada Company was completed, and was better than the first.

By it the great tract of land, on Lake Huron, was assigned to the Company, under an obligation that a third part of the purchase money should be laid out in public improvements.

It was not my business in this matter to think of the means of settling the question; these the government, I conceived, was bound to find, and the result has been, that the Company received eleven hundred thousand acres in one block. In assenting to this, Dr. Strachan shewed himself possessed of true clerical sagacity, as he received back for that tract the clergy reserves, and the law gave him 750,000 acres more. The Company, however, benefited by the transaction, and the clergy to this additional extent. The clergy reserve originally, which the Company purchased, were little more than 800,000 acres; by the negociation, the clergy received the addition of nearly as much more.

After the arrangement made between Dr. Strachan and me

Company Mr. Bosthe disard.

was the at last a ke place cate,—to rs by the

in a rely estabnave satant's eloal office, self, priment to the This da Com-

assigned t of the ents.

e means
nceived,
ompany
ck. In
essed of
ract the
s more.
on, and
reserve
e more
eceived

and me

the necessary preliminaries for giving the Company effect were established, and as soon as the charter was granted, I was appointed to go to Canada to make arrangements for undertaking operations next year.

CHAPTER IV.

Transactions with Mr. Rolfe. Liberality of government.

Alien question.

During the altercation between the secretary of state and the commissioners, a curious transaction took place.

In consequence of its being legally found that settlers in Upper Canada, subsequent to the American Independence, of American origin, were aliens, the whole province was thrown into a ferment, and it was determined in the legislature to naturalize them by bill. These memoirs afford no proper place to be particular about the occurrence, but a Mr. Rolfe was sent home by those who were opposed to the bill, to procure some how an amelioration of its provisions here.

He brought letters to me, and I requested him to let me know what other letters he had, that I might be able to see if I could be useful.

He mentioned particularly the names of the present Lord Chancellor, then Mr. Brougham, also Mr. Hume, Mr. Stanley, and some other parties, whose speeches made them seem, at a distance, factious subjects.—For men have a coarse way of judging politicians remote from the seat of government, in colonies as well as elsewhere.

Having asked him to dine with me on the following day, I begged him to do nothing with his letters till I had time to consider in what way I could be serviceable, requesting him to call upon me next morning. This he agreed to do, and we parted.

After he had gone away, I turned over the business in my mind, and came to the conclusion, that if there was reason in what he wanted, the consent of government would not be withheld to the framing of a measure that would allay the provincial ferment.

Accordingly, when he called next morning, we went up in a boat to Downing street, and in the course of the passage, I begged him not to deliver his letters till I could see Mr. Horton, telling him, that unless the government refused to redress the wrong complained of, it would do no good to have recourse to Mr. Brougham, or any of the other partizans, which he had come prepared to conciliate.

To this proposition he assented.

I went to Mr. Horton, and told him for what purpose Mr. Rolfe had come, and to whom he had especial letters, entreating that he would see him, and hear what he had to say, and endeavour to frame a palatable measure with him.

Mr. Rolfe was below stairs in the waiting-room when I had this interview, and Mr. Horton, with alert and meritorious condescension, as I considered it, consented to see him, though he was no accredited functionary.

Mr. Rolfe, on his part, agreed not to deliver his factious leters, and out of this arrangement rose a consent that he should be consulted in the provisions of a bill to naturalize the aliens. The whole proceeding on the part of government, was in the very best spirit, and I had reason to believe, from a letter that Mr. Rolfe wrote to me of acknowledgement, that I had been instrumental in appeasing the discontents of the Province. But he brought me the draft of a bill, which he himself had drawn totally different from what I understood the colonial department would sanction.

On reading his bill I saw, that as a political measure, it was, as I said to Mr. Rolfe himself, cursed stuff, and would never be sanctioned. And I beseeched him to suppress it as a very foolish thing. To this he seemingly agreed, and with Dr. Strachan, who was then in London, and Mr. Stephen, the counsel to the colonial office, he was put into what may be called a connived-at communication. The result was, that he, as I conceived, acceded to a bill which Mr. Stephen was directed to prepare, and returned to Canada pleased, as I had supposed, with the agreeable termination of his mission; but I was greatly deceived, for, as it afterwards turned out, the mis

rment.

nd the

lers in ice, of hrown to nat-

o natplace was cocure

et me

Lord inley, seem, way nt, in

ay, I ne to m to we

my n in t be

the

sion to London of Mr. Rolfe was not so much to pacify his country, and to allay the ferment which had been chaffed and excited among the people, as to obtain that kind of notoriety for himself, which some sort of patriots deem fame. The courses into which I had allured him, had, it was afterwards manifested, baffled and disappointed his rancid ambition.

is courexcited for himrses into nifested.

CHAPTER V.*

Trip to Dover—to France. Adventure there. Return to England.

During the controversy between the commissioners and the secretary of state, set on by the Canadian clergy and their black abettors here, Col. Cockburn and Mr. Davidson went with their families to Dover, as a quiet watering-place, and I, who had been detained in London, made an excursion to see them.

The fact is, that the aspect of the controversy was at that time not very conciliatory, and being afraid the Company would burst like a bubble, I was so exceedingly anxious and apprehensive of the loss I might have occasioned to the friends I had induced to take shares in the concern, that I could not rest. The idea had such possession of my head, that I hoped a change of scene would relieve me, as if any such change could allay the rankling of the dart that was carried in my side everywhere. I have already noticed as a constitutional peculiarity, when in this excessive earnest state, how much I am apt to fall into fits of self-absorption, in which, in a great measure, every thing but the present is forgotten. During my visit to Dover I became subject to one of these, the result of which neither Col. Cockburn nor Mr. Davidson are likely soon to forget.

Every body who has ever been at Dover knows that it is one of the vilest blue-devil haunts on the face of the earth except Little York in U. Canada, when he has been there one day. I was not at the time in a condition to contend with the local influences, and of course longed exceedingly, after the first four and twenty hours to leave it. Being in this dismal state on the quay with my friends, and seeing the French packet preparing to sail, I left them and went on board, with the intention of just looking at "the gate of Calais" and returning, as

if I could see Hogarth's characters there. I never thought of a passport, nor of looking at the contents of my pocket, but sailed away, and was hideously sea-sick, which is not a condition favourable to philosophy.

Late at night we landed, and in a house on the pier underwent an examination, during which I was admonished for coming without a passport; as I declared, however, my intention of returning with the packet, the omission was soon got over.— But it made my helplessness very apparent to the by standers, one of whom had compassion enough to shew me to an inn.

fre

ro fir

hd

in

la

After taking some refreshments, I saw the house would not do, and calling for my bill, put my hand in my pocket, but started aghast to find I had left my purse with a few sovereigns in my portmanteau, and had come away with only two or three shillings, little more than sufficed to settle the demand.

Intending to go back in the morning, the discovery did not however disconcert me, so I left the house, and went to Dessin's grand hotel where, as all travellers find themselves, I was elegantly and comfortably entertained, but how was a total stranger and foreigner to pay the bill, never once occurred to me, my head was so full of other matters.

In the course of the night a terrible storm came on,

"The wind blew, as 't wad blow its last,
The rattling showers rose on the blast,
The speedy gleams the darkness swallow'd,
Loud, deep, and lang the thunder bellow'd;
That night a child might understand
The de'il had business on his hand."

Next morning it was still so stormy, that the master of the packet called to inform me that he durst not venture to sea.

The intelligence was not terrible, as the town was to be seen; it proved, however, but an uninteresting place; every curiosity was soon inspected, and my time, the day being showery, began to hang very heavy and embarrassing. In this predicament, forgetting the state of my purse, I resolved to visit Dunkirk, and accordingly ordering a carriage, drove off.

The weather brightened, and I was amused with the journey,

nght of et, but ndition

underor comtion of
ver.—
unders,
n inn.
lld not
et, but
soverwo or

and.
d not
Desves, I
a tourred

the

be ry ig in to particularly with several burying grounds which the carriage passed, the most lugubrious spectacles I had ever seen; the gayest of which would have made a sedate English gibbet "guffaw" to look at its fantastic horrors.

Fortunately I had money enough, with the help of a small piece borrowed from the driver, to pay my way, but returned from Dunkirk to Calais without a fraction in my pocket; roused, however, from my brown study, I was like to eat my fingers at my stupidity.

Here was I, without a farthing, in one of the most splendid hotels in Europe, in a foreign land, among the French too, deep in debt to my courier, and not a friend to assist me. I was excessively vexed, but as self-upbraiding will pay no bills, I at last called for the landlord and told him how I was situated, requesting him to get payment from the captain of the packet, adding, and as I did not like to be without money, to lend me a Napoleon. The man laughed, lent me the money, and so cleared my way.

"Really, said I to myself, "the French are a very polite people: an English landlord would have referred an unknown foreigner in such circumstances to the stocks, and a Scotch one, for his hardiness, would have threatened him with the jougs,"

ing no con bod for

ser

the

the

as

CHAPTER VI.

Anxieties. Determination of the Canadian Directors. Judicious resolution. The Omen. Local memory. Curious instances.

Joking apart, however, the period between my return from America until the vindication of the commissioners was established, proved exceedingly irksome, for although the commissioners knew that they had conscientiously executed their trust, we could not disguise from ourselves that, as we had enjoved a discretionary freedom of opinion, a door was thereby opened by which cavil might enter and commit her nuisances with impunity. To apply to any serious course of study while the eclipse was in travel, it is needless to say was impossible. I never spent an equal space of life so idly: for although my time was occupied with many quests, which 1 thought might be useful if the Company became ultimately established. I could not divest myself of anxiety. My only confidence was in the determination of the court of directors to let the commissioners fight their own battle. This I think was chiefly owing, as I have said, to the governor, Mr. Charles Bosanquet, and gave me a very high opinion of his tact and sagacity. He saw at once the consequences which would ensue if the Company took any part in the question, and accordingly recommended the award to be accepted as if it had not been controverted. I have no doubt that by this straightforward decision he surprised and got the weather-gauge in a dispute in which the government, by listening to the representations of the clergy, came shockingly off by the lee. I conceive, by having suggested and carried into effect this most judicious manœuvre, he did the Canada Company "some service," and now that their stock is the most flourishing in London, it should be remembered; but gratitude is not an obligation of their charter.

However, to proceed: while matters were in abeyance during the commissioners' controversy, although my mind was in no very comfortable state, I wrote the tale of the Omen, a continuation, as it may be called, of a former attempt to embody presentiments and feelings in situations not uncommon, for it has always appeared to me, that the more mysterious the sentiments are to which one desires to give

" A local habitation and a name,"

the more simple and ordinary should the vehicle be in which they are to be conveyed. The state-coach is not employed to bring the crown from the Tower, an unobserved hackney does as well, or rather I should say, better.

Perhaps I may here properly introduce an instance of that peculiar local memory to which I have alluded, and in which I think myself in some measure remarkable. Among other properties which Mr. Ellice inherited in the state of New York, was one at Little Falls, on the Mohawk river. The situation is greatly picturesque,—a large river tumbles and dashes amidst wooded fragments and tall precipices,— the Dunkeld of America.

Above the village on the brow of a hill, stands a pretty octagon church, built by old Mr. Ellice before the Independence, and I was told on the spot, that it was known to his lady; -in consequence, it struck me that a view of the place would be an acceptable present, and on my way to Canada, I examined the environs to choose the most striking point to obtain it. On my return home, I described it to a young lady, who possessed superior power with her pencil, but I forgot to tell her in what direction the water ran, and in consequence, she made it flow the wrong way. She saw, however, by the scenery that there was something incongruous in the picture, and made another drawing, changing the current, and so verifying the likeness; a copy was then produced, and though no sketch had been taken on the spot, and months had elapsed since it was seen, my servant, who was at Little Falls with me, knew the landscape at once. I gave the late Lady Hannah Ellice the drawings.

Judiıs in-

from

comtheir
d enereby
ances
study
imor alch l
ately
only
etors
hink

tact
ould
ac-

had ghtin a sen-

onost

eronra-

had

reci

pre

not

to I

Kir

deg

a F

im

Among painters the faculty may be common, but I have no talent that way, though possessed of some inclination to make architectural designs. Nor am I at all times sure, that my description is sufficiently distinct to enable another to paint from it; after all, however, I suspect that some observance of the contour of things and of their character is really the whole extent occasionally experienced; to myself it is a very useless endowment, for I have never been in any situation where it was required. Besides, it cannot always be voluntarily commanded, it is like the poet's fytte or the singer's voice liable to be, if the expression may be used, sometimes brighter and dimmer, as the sensorium happens to be interested, nor is it always the most striking objects that make the strongest impression: a ludicrous instance of this may be also noted. I saw the present Queen of France a few days before she was married, she was then very simply dressed, going to a court gala, her gown was of light blue satin, short sleeved, and her meagre arms were without gloves.

But the most curious example is in a picture of my lamented and kind friend the late Earl of Blessington, by Sir Thomas Lawrence. It was in the Somerset House exhibition, when first painted.

In going through the rooms without noticing whose it was, I looked at it strangely struck, and said to a gentleman who was with me, " If that picture is like, and I should ever become acquainted with the original, we shall be great friends.' On looking at the catalogue, we saw it was Lord Mountjoy Years after, in 1821, I became acquainted with his Lordship, he was then Earl of Blessington, and I had forgot all about the portrait of Lord Mountjoy. We did, however, become friends, but it was not till long after, when his appearance was greatly changed, that I knew he had ever been Lord Mountjoy, not indeed till one day when, sauntering through the drawing rooms in his mansion, St. James's Square, I discovered among the pictures the identical portrait by Lawrence. hanging in one of the front apartments, on the left side of the entrance to the saioon, next to the fire-place. It was removed when the house was let to the Wyndham club, but there

was a stain on the crimson paper which marked where the frame had been.

no

ke

my

int

ace

the

ery

ion

ta-

ice

ter

is

m-I vas urt aer

ntnas en

as, ho e-s.' by p, ut le is t-

в

It is something like this which enables persons to identify, after a long interval, stolen goods, but in the peculiarity of recalling objects of sight, and describing them as if they were present, consists the faculty of local memory. Like freckles of the skin, tints of complexion, and hues of the hair; it is nothing to boast of, though it helps to make individuality and to mark identity. The late unfortunate Stanislaus, the last King of Poland, had the endowment to a very extraordinary degree. He once so described the Empress Catherine II. to a painter, that one of the best likenesses ever painted of her imperial majesty was produced.

Vol. II. C

CHAPTER VII.

o:

C

0

tl

m

b

ir

tl

g

it

pı

m

The death of my mother. Reflections.

While the controversy between the commissioners and the colonial office was proceeding, I was overtaken by a sorrowful misfortune. In the course of nature my mother's life was drawing to a close, and could not reasonably be expected to be much prolonged, but the sudden extinction of her intellectual faculties was not anticipated; she was, however, smitten with a severe stroke of paralysis, which at once disabled her corporeal functions, and, to a very painful degree, obscured her mind. The account of this event came at a time when I was not very able to pay her a visit, but, after consulting the doctor, I set off by the mail, and found her condition to be as helpless as it had been described. She lingered several months, though to her family, she was literally no more.

On my entering her room she recognised me, and in the effort to express her gladness, became awake, as it were, to her own situation, and wept bitterly, attempting, with ineffectual babble, to explain what she felt. This was her last effort of intelligence, for although she continued to recognise me while I remained, she evinced no particular recollection of herself, nor of the mere vegetable existence to which she had been reduced, indeed all her sensibilities gradually declined.

No doubt the death of a parent is a very common occurrence, and the grief of it is mitigated by that circumstance and by the consideration that it belongs to the inevitable incidents of humanity; but every sorrow is rendered more or less severe by the circumstances in which it takes place. In this case, when I look back on the intervening events, I cannot, but regard my mother as fortunate in the time of her end; she was in consequence spared from many afflictions, of a kind

she would have felt keenly. The very obliteration of her faculties was in itself a muffling of sorrow, and though their obscurity could not be witnessed without anguish, there was a blessing in the dispensation. It in this partook of the colour of her life; full in its privacy of what, to the female mind, are great vicissitudes, it called forth exertion, and though few could suffer more intensely, still fewer could look at the worst of fortune more undismayed, when endeavour might avert the threatening.

ie il

as

be

al

th

0-

er

as

br,

ess

gh

he

to

C-

ort

ne

of

ad

ır-

ce

ci-

or

In

ot.

he nd To myself the event was, perhaps, more influential than most readers may imagine. From my very childhood it had been my greatest delight to please this affectionate parent, and in consequence her loss weakened, if I may say, the motive that had previously impelled my energies. The world to me was deprived of one that I was actuated by an endeavour to gratify, and in proportion the charm of life was diminished in its power; but the misfortunes also were weakened in their pungency, and no effort of reason was necessary to convince me, that I would suffer less by not having her anxieties to consider.

Many years before I had lost my father; but although few could have stronger claims on the reverence of their children than those to which he was entitled, there is a difference in the filial love which belongs to the father, from that which the child's heart thinks is the mother's due. The one is allied to esteem, friendship, and respect, but the other is a gentle feeling composed of confidence, kindness, and gratitude. The one is more masculine in all its qualities; but the other, without the mind being able to say wherefore, is at once more durable and tender. Fiction has often recorded those divorces of the heart to which paternal regard is liable, but it is a rare and improbable occurrence to suppose the alienation of maternal love. I am, however, saying more than can be requisite to the reader who has survived his parents, even though he may not feel so much the curtailment of his motives to exertion.

cai

rel su

at

po

tax

be

cro

fui

Th

mi

tin

me

mo

en

pr

or

th

wl

w

ce

th

it,

in

gr

ti

je

of

fo

in

CHAPTER VIII.

Emigration practically considered. Mr. Horton's * plan.
A suggestion concerning a fund for emigration.

For many years I had paid a kind of desultory attention to colonial subjects, and now seeing before me a prospect of being engaged practically with schemes of emigration and the care of settlers, I began to apply to the details of those branches.

While engaged in these pursuits, accidental circumstances brought me acquainted with Mr. Horton's ideas on the same object, and it was gratifying to find my theoretical notions coincided with his, which were derived from or at least corroborated by parliamentary investigations. I do not think his intelligence in this branch of policy has been appreciated at half its worth; but while I cannot sufficiently express my humble approbation of his endeavours, I beg respectfully to differ from him with regard to the means of attaining his ends.

One important fact he has completely ascertained, and that is that in the present circumstances of this country, the population is superabundant, and the employments consequently deficient.

Having perfectly determined this truth, he benevolently sought to provide a fund for the relief of the kingdom, optional, it is true, in the adoption, but coercive when once adopted. I refer to the power he has procured for parishes to mortgage their rates in order to raise a fund for the transportation of paupers. On this scheme, though feasible, we have always differed.

The tendency of his plan appeared to me to be the relief of England only from her super-abundant labourers, which I contended could not be done without increasing, in effect, the

^{*} The Right Honourable Sir R. J. W. Horton was not knighted when in the Colonial Office.

price of labour, and that his measure was objectionable because it would have at once this effect, and the effect of increasing the parochial expenditure. It seemed to me that the relief to England would be nugatory. By transporting the superabundant population to the colonies, you benefitted them at the expense of England, inasmuch as by increasing their population, you extended the basis upon which constitutionally taxation could be levied; and I held it to be constitutionally better than his measure, that a price should be put upon the crown lands in the colonies, and that from the sales of them a fund available for purposes of emigration should be formed.— Thus, out of the colonies themselves, deriving benefit from immigration, a fund might be drawn for the purpose of promoting the emigration from the mother country.

This view of the subject did not, however, so clearly strike me as advantageous till after it had been determined that the money to be paid by the Canada Company should not be given to my constituents, but unconstitutionally appropriated to prevent the necessity of applying to Parliament for aid here, or to the provincial House of Assembly. It seemed to me that the Crown usurped a power contrary to the constitution, when it appropriated the proceeds of the national domains without the sanction of Parliament.

Finding myself disappointed in the application of the proceeds to the payment of the claims, and not approving of the unconstitutional appropriation which had been made of it, I was induced to consider the next best means of applying it.

Public works, in ancient times, were the resource to which great kings after their wars, when victorious, had recourse for the employment of their armies, and as there was at that time the Rideau Canal and other extensive undertakings projected in Canada, I considered that the proceeds of the sale of the crown lands might be judiciously employed on them; for I had only in common with many of the public, prior to the investigations of Mr. Horton, a vague notion respecting the

n.

to ehe es. ·

me ns or-

ces

nk at mfer

is u-

lly tly al,

ge uif-

of Ι 16

he

superabundant population of the United Kingdom. But when that fact was indisputably ascertained, it appeared to me that it would be a most beneficial application of the money to throw it into a fund to assist purposes from emigration. As yet no visible benefit is nationally derived of sending off the swarmings of the superabundant population, although a legitimate fund is within reach.

Without question it may be expected that a legislature will spare its subjects as much as possible from taxation, and therefore it is apparently not far removed from a wise policy, to make use of the national property to avoid taxation.—But this surely is not conconstitutional? I do not, however, like to consider faults so much as remedies, and therefore would regard money arising from the sale of the crown lands in colonies as constituting a separate fund from that which is formed from the regular revenue, and the encouragement of emigration seems the right application of it.

The revenue of a state, or colony, or community, should be raised from the people, and I hold that the money arising from the sale of the crown lands in the colonies should be separately considered from the revenues. Instead, therefore, of giving parishes the power of mortgaging their poor-rates, I would say there is an adequate fund already provided by the colonial lands to defray the removal of emigrants, and thereby to relieve the parishes. But as it is, the people of England tax themselves for the removal of paupers, and neither Ireland nor Scotland are in a condition to share in the boon, if it be one.* Why should the inhabitants of a parish here contribute, for example, to increase the population of Canada, there-

^{*} Ireland has co poor-rates to mortgage, and consequently cannot benefit by Mr. Horton's measure, and I have an account, which I gave to him, that shows how little it is applicable to Scotland. By this account it appears that

⁸⁶ parishes support their paupers by assessment.

⁴³¹ do. do. by collections at the kirk doors.

¹⁵⁵ do. have or had saved money. 202 do. have mortifications, or funds arising from legacies.

⁸⁷⁴N. B. The great towns are considered as single parishes; all the parishes collect on Sunday.

hen

that

row

t no

.rmnate

ture

and ooli-

h. vev-

fore

ands

hich

nent

d be

from

ate-

giv-

ould

nial

re-

tax

nor

be rib-

ere-

nefit that ears

col-

by reducing the taxation payable by the previous Canadian population? We begin at the wrong end of the business.—We transfer our labourers to Canada, and they must be very little worth indeed if Canada will not pay the expense, by the sale of the crown lands, of bringing them over. By their presence the value of land is augmented, and, as the case is, at the expense of the people of England; but constitute a fund from the sale of the crown lands in the colony, and you relieve the people of England.

It is some satisfaction, that in an effort to relieve the distresses of the English and Irish parishes, I have not been altogether nugatory. On every occasion, [but of late they have been very limited,] I have endeavoured to persuade many of those gentlemen who have taken an interest in emigration, that the true fund by which it can be promoted is the proceeds of the crown lands abroad, and on a recent application from a society in Ireland through the Colonial Office, I urged the expendiency of making the revenues arising from the sale of the crown lands contributory to this purpose. How much would the twenty thousand pounds a year payable by the Canada Company contribute to this object?

Besides thus conceiving that a fund might be constitutionally provided for drawing off a regular stream of emigration, I ought to mention that I submitted to the Earl of Dalhousie, and afterwards to Lord Howick, a plan of colonization which, in a fiscal respect, might be made productive. The Earl of Dalhousie himself examined the plan with care, which was so far gratifying; for if the Canada Company can make money of their speculation, our statesmen should explain to the nation how the colonies cost so much.

er face I have

CHAPTER IX.

Letter from Dr. Strachan. Letter to Sir P. Maitland, the lieutenant-governor. Sail for America.

When the time arrived for my going to Canada, an occurrence took place, which had a very material effect on my comfort. Arch-deacon Strachan was at the time in Scotland. and before my departure from London, I received a letter from him enclosing two others, one for Major Hillier the Secretary, the other for the Attorney-general of the province; these letters as he said in his, would contribute to make my situation in the province agreeable. The whole spirit and tenor of his observations tended to impress me with a very distinct apprehension that I had been viewed with jealousy and distrust in the province, for what cause I could not divine, but his communication was exceedingly friendly, though he had overstepped propriety towards me in making it. He forgot that I was but the servant of the Company, and had no discretionary power to consult any one not responsible for his advice.

I ought perhaps to have made the Directors of the Canada Company acquainted with the letter, but upon consideration, I thought the least said is soonest mended. I therefore kept it to myself, determined to act precisely as if it had never been received. Before, however, leaving London, perhaps on the very day I received the letter, I went down to the Colonial Office to take leave of Mr. Horton, and to receive a letter from the Secretary of State to Sir Peregrine Maitland, to be delivered to his Excellency along with my dispatch from the Directors of the Company, apprising him of my mission.

In giving me the official letter, Mr. Horton said in rather a

particular manner to me, that in delivering it I should request Sir Peregrine Maitland, as a personal favour, to apprise me himself if at any time complaint was made of me. This communication which was very kind in its tenor, coming after Dr. Strachan's communication, confirmed me in the notion that I had been an object of particular jealousy, when a commissioner, and I need not say that the groundless charge filled me with resentment.

d,

ry

ď,

er

c-; y

sid

eeor

I soon after left London for the Isle of Wight, where I was joined by Mr. George W—— of Ditton Park, who was going to Canada to spy the nakedness of the land, with a view then of ultimately settling in it. I am not sure that Mr. W—— was aware in the course of the voyage of my having any cause of uneasiness, but in going to Canada from New York, I made him acquainted with my suspicions and conjectures, all which bore upon a belief that I was not destined to be very comfortable during my residence in Canada.

sta the the

> an mo

> pe

in

th

ve

I

re

v

d

o

I

EPOCH SIXTH.

CHAPTER I.

Reflections. Unprovided for difficulties. Presentiments.— Arrival at New York. News from the Consul, at Geneva. At Batavia. Buffaloe. Canada newspapers. Conduct of Mr. Rolfe. Arrival. Wait on the Governor.— Consequences.

I DID not feel myself entering seriously the arena of life till I undertook my second mission to Canada. Absurd as the expression may seem, it is nevertheless just. Whatever I had done before or encountered, seemed mere skirmishing to what then awaited me. I felt the full weight of my task, it is true, but a persuasion that, if it were well done, I would obtain a degree of enviable credit.—The employment was inviting from that circumstance and the difficulties were therefore undervalued; they were, however, seen, distinctly enough, but I trusted too much to the indulgence that would be conceded to time. I overlooked my being the representative of others, who had not paid the same attention to the subject as I had done myself, and who were not in consequence sufficiently acquainted with the difficulties to be overcome. In this there was an error, a pardonable one, however, for it implied that I only entertained that respect for the directors of the Canada Company, which their conduct had obtained for them in the world; a man of more actual experience in the business awaiting him, would have fortified himself with better provisions, but though I thought them necessary, they did not seem of primary importance, or I never would have embarked under the same aspect of circumstances.-Far be it from me, in

stating this, to impute blame: I think the directors did what they thought best. However, my object is merely to request the reader to bear in mind, that with the most liberal discretionary authority that any man could require in a great trust, and responsible for the administration of nearly a million of money, I was hampered with the most inconsistent restrictions.

I was not allowed to take with me any clerk, far less a person in whom I could confide; I had not even a letter of introduction but the official vouchers, although there were in the directory, gentlemen who had resided in Canada many years, and had numerous friends in all parts of the country.— I had, no doubt, my own friends, but I had very little personal knowledge of them. In a word, I was left destitute of those resources of advice and information, which the nature of my mission so greatly required.

e-

n-

fe

he

ad

at

ıe,

a

ıg

n-

I

to

6,

d

1

Perhaps it may be said that a person of more prudence would have hesitated to undertake so important a charge under such circumstances, but as my first class of objects were of the nature of inquiries, I did not regard these omissions as I ought; but I did attach importance to them, and they did weigh so heavily on my mind, that for the greatest part of the passage out to New York, they actually seemed to me as of a sinister character, in spite of reason and the honourable reputation of those I had to deal with. In fact I could not entirely repel a strange presentiment with which I was haunted, that there was something of method in the proceedings that defied discernment, at least it baffled mine.

The cares of my duties commenced with my arrival at New York, and the considerations which depressed me on the voyage became fainter, but still I could not entirely shake off the bodements with which my thoughts were occasionally depressed.

In stating this, I am convinced that all who read it will think me indulgent to unwarrantable fancies, but the future will show how far I was affected by mere imaginary doubts.

The novelty of arriving in New York would have supersed-

ed all apprehensions, but it happened that on the day I landed the consul mentioned to me in a manner not calculated to allay my nameless apprehensions, that there had been a trial concerning Mackenzie, the editor of the Colonial Advocate, in which I was mentioned as one of his advisers. The story at the time surprised, but little interested me; I only recollected the file of his newspapers, and the civility of the editors in general; nor could I imagine that there was any thing in the transaction susceptible of an equivocal interpretation.

0

11

lc

to

n

F

٥

o

t

C

n

c

p

From New York Mr. W———and I proceeded to Genevawhere I stopped some time to examine the forms, books, and bonds, in the Pulteney's-office there; where all was in the frankest manner thrown open, and I was highly pleased with my reception.

From Geneva I went to Batavia, and examined the same things in the Holland Company's office, where I experienced equal confidence and gratification, especially when it turned out that I had many years before been acquainted with some of the agent's friends. He was related to the Mons. Otto, who signed the preliminaries, on the part of the French, to the treaty of Amiens.

From Batavia we proceeded to Buffaloe, and without any particular adventure arrived at Niagara, with the intention of going to York next day. Here we met with Canada newspapers, and among them with Sir Peregrine Maitland's speech at the opening of the provincial parliament. Conceive my astonishment, however, on seeing, notwithstanding what had been done for Mr. Rolfe, and his letter of acknowledgment, that he had given notice of his intention to bring in an alien bill, although the governor from the throne had announced a similar measure.

I had never then experienced such a prostration of principle on the part of any man.

Next day we reached York, and I immediately waited on the governor to deliver the letters from the secretary of state, d

y

n-

in

at

ed

in

he

8,

hd

ne

th

ne

ed

 \mathbf{ed}

of

ho

he

ıy

of

8-

ch

ıy

ıd

ıt,

n

€d

i-

e,

and from the directors of the Canada Company. In the course of the conversation which ensued, I complained of the manner in which Mr. Rolfe had acted, and said, that if he persevered in his resolution, I should feel it my duty to petition the lower house against his nonsensical bill, for such it appeared to me to be, as it would have the effect of molesting the province, and thereby indirectly injuring the interests of the Canada Company.

The governor at this interview, when I delivered Mr. Horton's message, mentioned that Mackenzie* had made use of a letter I had sent him, in a trial to obtain damages for an outrage he had suffered in his property by a riot.

Little more then passed, but he invited me to dine with him, and politely requested I would bring Mr. W. with me. In the meantime I sent the two letters which Archdeacon Strachan had, I have no doubt, with the kindest intentions, transmitted from Edinburgh, little, I think, aware that his own communication disclosed how much I should stand in need of patronage in the province. I then sent for Mr. Rolfe, and before Mr. W. made no effort to mitigate my reproaches. His excuse for the part he was playing was very lame, offering to introduce me to some members of his faction in the house of assembly, and particularly to a Mr. Bidwell, who was afterwards speaker, but I refused to have anything to do with him or them, and I never afterwards spoke to him, or in any way recognized him, further than once in passing on the highway by a cold bow.

Subsequent transactions had perhaps, some effect in hardening the decision I had come to, but never having been a politician all my life, the conduct of Rolfe was not calculated to seduce me from the state of seclusion in which I had ever kept myself.

After dinner, at the government house, when the company adjoured to the gallery to take coffee, I thought that I perceiv-

[.] Editor of the Colonial Advocate.

ed, from some sort of free-masonary between the two gentlemen to whom I had the letters from Archdeacon Strachan, that they appeared not to have previously communicated with each other, and that they had something to say together.—
They did not notice that they had received the letters, but I mentioned to them my surprize at the conduct of Rolfe, and declared if he persisted in attempting to force his alien bill, I would expose his conduct to the public attention.

This, be it observed, was within a few hours after my arrival; when I had no time to do any thing, and when, what I proposed to do, was necessarily contingent on the approval of Sir Peregrine Maitland.

[We omit the three following chapters which are taken up with a correspondence between Sir P. Maitland and Mr. Galt—barren of facts and incidents, and only interesting to the feelings of the latter, who was wrongfully accused of siding in his former visits, with political agitators.—Editor.]

CHAPTER V.

d

bf

en

to dAt Quebec. Attentions from the Earl and Countess of Dalhousie. Mention to his Lordship my reception in Upper Canada. Business. An amateur theatre. Return to Upper Canada.

From Montreal we went to Quebec, where we arrived soon before the provincial Parliament met. Besides the business which I had to execute there for the Canada Company, I considered it my duty, having time by winter, to do as much as I could for the sufferers by the late war, and I mentioned to the Earl of Dalhousie my intention to canvass the opposition on the subject; making certain that the Government party would support my endeavours to procure indemnification. His Lordship considered it a very hopeless task, but agreed in opinion that every measure should be tried.

While at Quebec, I was greatly indebted to the Earl and Countess for particular attention, and I took an opportunity of stating to his Lordship in what manner I had been treated and regarded in Upper Canada, expressing my surprise that I who had never been in all my life a political character, should be supposed to turn politician in that province; but there was no help for being so regarded. Misconception and misrepresentation were busy again me, and I had no alternative but to hope that the same conduct I had pursued at home would in the end prevoil.

Seeing that I had established myself where a better understanding existed respecting me than in the Upper province, I set about my work, and as my time was necessarily limited, I had a great deal to do, but the month spent at Quebec was about the most varied and pleasant of my life. For when I

the

pec

how

ioke

fort

the

the

ing

con

ting

stin

Qu

ous

fest

tle

INOI

sin

tec

tu

to Ca

> pa T

ca

ev

to fo

CI

a

a

0

had executed the essential business intrusted to me by the Canada Company, I laboured to get the claims adjusted, and certainly succeeded in obtaining a candid degree of attention from the Canadian party. A committee of the House of Assembly was appointed to investigate the claims, and the gentlemen of which it was composed requested me to draw up the Report myself for the House.

As it was necessary to conciliate the English and Government party in this proceeding, I did draw up the Report, and before showing it to any of the Canadian gentlemen to whom I was so much obliged, I submitted it to one of the Legislative Council, who made some verbal alterations on the draft which I still possess, and then I showed it to Lord Dalhousie. His Lordship was pleased to think that more had been accomplished than he had expected, and the difficulty of getting it through the Lower House overcome.

The report was then given in to the committee, and passed the Lower House unanimously, but to my astonishment when it was submitted to the Legislative Council, where the Government party was strongest, it was thrown out.

The rejection took place after I had left Quebec, for my time there was necessarily limited; but the result was exceedingly distressing, nor can I say yet that its effects have faded from my mind. I can only think that if such rancour prevails between the English and French factions as to be so irreconcileable, it is not to be wondered at, that the province should be so distracted. In this particular case the French party acted in the best spirit, and I can only testify to their good will.*

In other respects my residence at Quebec was extremely agreeable, no bound was set to the hospitality of the gentlemen to whom I was made known, and though I had much to do, I had leisure, from the rigour of the weather, for

^{*}Dr. Dunlop was with me, and performed a highland chieflain in the farce, —to those who know his grotesque manner I need not sny how; the rest of the world cannot conceivelt. Drolling on my court to the opposition, he used to call the meetings "Devoushire House doings."

amusement. Besides constant private parties, an amateur theatre was got up, and I wrote a farce for it, in which the peculiarities of the inhabitants were caricatured. It was not however all mine; no less than thirty-three contributors gave jokes and hints to the composition. It was admirably well performed, as the parts were written for the actors, and some of them outlined by themselves. Their Excellencies came to the performance in state, and the receipts, in addition to giving fifty pounds to the Emigrant Society of the town, left a considerable balance to be appropriated for the expenses of fitting up the theatre. Indeed, the whole affair gave a sort of stimulus to the amusements of the time, and I must say, if Quebec did not then enjoy a merry season, it must be a joyous place. Mr. W returned to England before the festivities commenced, and then intended to return as a settler to the Upper province, but he married when he got come, and the intention was abandoned.

Connected with the dramatic entertainment, an amusing occurrence took place.—Before the farce was distributed among those who were to perform the parts, we had a nocturnal sederunt with whiskey punch in the castle of St. Louis to read the play, and it happened that in coming from the Hon. Captain Maul's room, the gentleman who was to perform the part of a Glasgow merchant, took the farce in his pocket. The ground was covered with snow, and the air frosty, which caused him to stumble and lose the manuscript, by which event there was every probability that an end would be put to our anticipated entertainment. The farce, however, was found in the street, by some one going along.

After the performance, we had a jovial dinner of an agricultural society at some distance from the town, and as I had prolonged my stay to the last minute, I was obliged after dinner to travel in a sleigh by moonlight over the snow all night, on my return to Montreal.

That visit to Quebec was, as the Scotch say, but "a glaik" on the sombre hue of a varied life, in which the shade has ever most prevailed.

D 2*

CHAPTER VI.

Inquiries respecting the climate of Lower Canada. Vegetation under the snow. Another local phenomenon.—
Floating ice in the river. Cross the river.

While at Quebec I considered it a duty incumbent on me to obtain some information respecting the climate, the encouragement of emigration being so essential to my trust. It seemed extraordinary that it should be so much colder than that of Europe in the same latitudes, and I thought only a local cause could account for the difference, but my inquiries were not satisfactorily answered; a curious fact, however, was mentioned deserving of investigation, and which goes far to prove that the rigour of the Canadian climate will probably abate in time, as the country becomes better settled.

My informant was an intelligent old gentleman, to whom I was inclined to give implicit credit; he said, that in the course of many years he had observed that the heat of the earth hollowed or coved the snow, next to the ground, in so much that vegetation commenced long before there was any appearance of the winter departing, and mentioned particularly, that on one St. Patrick's day, when the landscape was covered with snow, he saw a number of Irish children digging under it to gather shamrocks for the festival.

From this observation I am disposed to infer, that the temperature of the earth there is none inferior to that of Europe, and that we must look for the cause of the extreme coldness of the air to something above ground; what that may be I do not pretend to explain, but when it is considered that so much of the country is covered with wood, of which the wind stirs the branches as so many fanners, it seems not improbable that

as the woods are cleared away, the climate will become milder."

Another local phenomenon deserves to be examined, and when it is considered how much man has attained the mastery of winds and currents by steam navigation, it does not seem a far fetched notion to imagine that the time is not distant when the St. Lawrence, below Quebec, shall be rendered navigable all the winter. I do not undertake to say how this may be done, but it is quite manifest that although the river is encumbered with floes of ice, it is nevertheless always open to the ocean, and art should be able to supply the means of rendering the navigation so too.

4.

to

ur-

It

an

a

les

er,

bes

ob-

n I

he

he

80

ny

cu-

as

ig-

n-

e,

SS

do ch

rs

at

It ought to be observed, that the floating ice in the channel must have naturally an effect in lessening the commotion of the water when the winds are unbridled, and that by the comparative calm in consequence, the navigation by steam may be rendered proportionably easy. The most obvious mode of correcting the impediment is, no doubt, by employing tugs to take down vessels destined to sail in the Atlantic; but then no species of tug has yet been invented that is not liable to become embarrassed in the ice, owing to the primitive character and situation of the paddle wheels. It would certainly be worth while to invent an improvement in the situation of the paddle wheels, to overcome the imperfection alluded to. But although it is admitted that the waters of the St. Lawrence are always free to the sea, it is as generally conceived that the navigation of them is interrupted during the winter.

This is no place to enlarge upon the subject, but while the

^{*} The author does not seem to have ever troubled himself much about physical geography. In his poetical hypothesis of making the branches of the trees fanners, he entirely overlooks their property of shading the soil from the solar rays. A little inquiry into this subject shows us, that there is in the same latitude as marked a difference of climate between the western coast of America and the eastern coast of Asia, as there is between the western coast of Europe and the eastern coast of America. If Philadelphia, for example, be so much colder in winter than Lisbon, and Smyrna, in nearly the same latitude,—there is just us marked a contrast between these two cities on the one hand, and Pekin in China on the other. The great cold in winter and extreme heat in summer are similar in Pekin to what is met with in Philadelphia, both being in nearly the same latitude. Entr.

fact is not disputed, that the tidal currents of the St. Lawrence are open, there should be no hindrance to judicious art, in attempting to overcome what is deemed at present an insurmountable obstacle.

fi

ic

di

W

C

tl

u

8

I was led to make these reflections by crossing the river to Point-Levi, when it was full of floes and sheets of ice. The reader will recollect, when I mentioned my excursion across the Danube to the Russian camp, at Widdin, I abstained from giving any description of the passage, because I had in reserve an account of crossing, in similar circumstances, the more majestic St. Lawrence.

The navigation of the Danube was in itself sufficiently appalling, but the pieces of ice, though they crashed like a continuous peal of thunder, were not large, and one boatman could steer amidst them without difficulty; mine, by his calmness seemed to think without danger, but I frankly confess, the scene was to me terrific: on the St. Lawrence it was sublime.

The late Sir John Caldwell had ordered his barge to be manned for the occasion; we had six boatmen, and went on board on the shore under the castle of St. Louis. This feat, though frequently undertaken, called for all the presence of mind that a stranger could command. We lay at full length in the bottom of the boat, which was launched down a steep inclined plane of ice by the boatmen into the water, and in the course of a few seconds the struggle with the ice in the river commenced. When a large sheet was encountered, the boatmen leapt out upon and shuttled as it were the boat across, relaunching it again into the water. Sometimes we met an extensive floe of broken pieces, which surrounded us on all sides, but the boatmen, none daunted, leapt out again and dragged the boat through the floe themselves, plunging amidst the floating masses. The passage as it may be imagined, was tedious, and any thing but pleasant.

When we reached the Point-Levi shore, where the ice was

fixed to the ground, it was some time before we could discover a fit landing place, for at the time the tide was low, and the ice stood like a cliff wherever we attempted to get on shore.

Leaving the boat we embarked in a sleigh which Sir John Caldwell had provided, and drove to see the falls of Chaudiere, where he was constructing a dam for his mills. The work would in this country have been suspended, on account of the rigour of the season, for the themometer was then several degrees below zero, but the workmen seemed undeterred in their tasks by the cold, as they were however obliged to work with iron crows, they all had on gloves made of skins, without fingers.

After viewing the falls and the dam, we returned to Point-Levi, and there re-embarked for Quebec, but as it was then ebb water, we were carried by the ice and current several miles below the landing place, and had for some time no prospect of reaching it that night. The sun was setting, and the whole surface of the river was covered with sheets and floes. The scene, however, was extraordinarily brilliant, and by drawing our attention to several points at the same time, lessened our apprehensions, for the ice on the shore extended as far as the eye could reach, and here and there the setting sun kindled a crystalline pinnacle with inconceivable splendour. Soon after, we reached the shore, but considerably below the landing place.

To my companion the excursion did not seem, from custom, to be very perilous, but to me it was truly wild; nor were my feelings comforted by observing several boats in the same circumstances as ourselves, though the boatmen were cheerily singing, and seemed altogether unconscious of danger.

id fa he

v.

th th

B

b

0

b

C

F

u

g

CHAPTER VII.

A project. Means of effecting it. The turning of the river St. Lawrence. Motives for the work.

In the course of my return from Quebec to York in Upper Canada, nothing remarkably interesting occurred; but in sitting wrapt in furs in the sleigh, I had leisure seriously to consider a suggestion which Dr. Dunlop had made to me respecting the practicability of rendering the Petite Nation river navigable for boats, and I authorized a surveyor to run the level between the waters of it and the St. Lawrence.

As in all cases when I can do nothing but think my imagination is apt "to make herself wings and fly away", and the doctor's thought became a subject of cogitation. Assuming, therefore, to myself that the level of the Petite Nation world be found lower than the St. Lawrence, I constructed a grand scheme. "Cyrus", said I in soliloquy, "turned aside the Euphrates at Babylon, and

" ' What man dare I dare.'

I am a bigger, if not so great a man as the Persian king, and may I not turn the mighty St. Lawrence as he did the Euphrates, and by a canal, of which the Petite Nation shall be the course, lead it into the Ottawa, especially now when the Granville canal has opened the navigation of that other stupendous stream?"

At this time it was spoken of as a project, to overcome the rapids of the St. Lawrence, and to render the lakes open to schooner navigation from the sea,—that a chain of canals should be excavated on the banks of the river,—a plan actually now proposed. In the reverie which Dr. Dunlop's

idea suggested, this scheme was necessarily set aside, and a far better, of course and cheaper notion contemplated; it is however only fair and just to suppose the other preferable.

From the report afterwards transmitted to me by the surveyor, it would seem that this is not altogether the case; for although it may be better than the doctor's scheme of damming the Petite Nation, it is prodigiously inferior to that of my Babylonian dream.

By the report, my notion received information; but it is to be observed, that as I was never on the spot myself, I can only speak from the opinion of others.

r

n

to

n

n

ıd

u-

1-

3-

d

The surveyor found that below the town of Prescot, at the bottom of the lake-navigation, a canal might very easily be cut, by which a communication would be effected with the Petite Nation river, and that the level was full seven feet under that of the St. Lawrence. He speaks, indeed, of the ease with which a junction may be made, in a strain which gives, whatever may be the truth, a very laudable conception of his piety.

After I received his encouraging report I spoke to two or three friends to have the practicability of the union scientifically examined and stated that the canal would probably require twenty-five thousand pounds, (I was informed only six or eight thousand,) which I proposed to raise in shares by a company, if the examination verified the surveyor's report.

My object in this business was undoubtedly founded on the public utility of the scheme, but I was actuated by another motive.

It was essential to the prosperity of the Canada Company to make the country better known, and to hold out inducements to emigrants to come from the mother country as settlers. The assurance of finding employment on their arrival seemed to me the most feasible course to attain this end, and accordingly, I trusted when the Canal Company would be formed, and the shares made payable by instalments, I

might be able to induce the Directors of the Canada Company to advance the necessary money, at six per cent, interest, taking the Canal for security.

I did not, however, think of calling for much actual advance, intending only to set a price on certain lots of land, and to take labour on the canal in payment; but circumstances arose which prevented me from carrying the design into effect, and the reverie of turning the superb St. Lawrence "vanished into thin air."

In thus relating the objects of my thoughts in returning to the Upper province, I should state that I was not at all times so absorbed with them as not to remark the actual condition of the country through which I was passing.

The spring had shown no symptoms to return in Lower Canada, but as soon as we crossed the Ottawa [Utawas,] the snow was evidently melting in the Upper province, and it was gratifying to observe every-where, that improvement was indisputably active. Perhaps my trusts made me more observant of this phenomenon than most people, but independently of these, it admitted of no doubt, that the country was progressing. This spectacle, at all times gratifying, was an assurance to me that in urging my friends to interest themselves in the Canada Company, I had not formed either an erroneous estimate of the capabilities of the country, or of the disposition of the inhabitants.

The pleasure of the hope of prosperity to the scheme was damped by the consideration that I was not provided with any adequate assistance, but left to pick up what clerks I could find unemployed to carry on the business. It is not for me to say that in this the directors acted in ignorance of the wild country in which the operations of the Company were to be conducted; I believe they were actuated by a desire to conciliate their proprietory, but their proprietory knew as little of the case as they did themselves. Time however, and experience, has improved the knowledge of both, but I think

r

to

Ьe

t,

to

es

bn

er

it nt re

ıs

n

ŋ

 \mathbf{s}

the directors are actuated by motives of economy which might justify the Government to complain of the short coming in the inducements which led to the sale of the reserves.

I state this from experience, knowing the views on which the Company was formed. More than twenty years, as these memoirs testify, I have paid attention to the best mode of settling the country. And my principle was to consider the land as a raw material to be manufactured by an outlay of more capital. On this point I differ, certainly, from the directors of the Canada Company, nor can I conceive that the Government had any inducement for selling the land to a Company if the improvements were to be effected, not by that Company, but by the settlers individually.

你在一点一点是我的一种我们在我们的我们的人工。 地名美国加拉

and a manager of which was the figure of the parties of the partie

The same in the state of the state of the same of the

The property of the property o

CHAPTER VIII.

Cause of my soliciting the superintendency. My situation.
Accommodations. Invidious remark. Colonization. My system. Plan of buildings.

IMMEDIATELY on reaching York I commenced the duties of my mission, the objects of which were limited to inquiry. and for the accomplishment of these, eight months were allowed; but in consequence of finding between two and three hundred offers to purchase "lots" of land awaiting investigation. I solicited an extension of the time, as my duties were thus enlarged, and the operose task of establishing a system and routine for the future management of the Company's affairs necessarily imposed. The laborious and responsible details of the latter tasks were not contemplated when I left England, but as they were agreeable to me, it was no hardship, rather a pleasure to undertake them, confident in the end that they would be adequately remunerated in a pecuniary respect. But I had soon cause to experience the evil of that determination of the court of Directors, by which I was denied the assistance of any person with me from London in whom I could have confidence.

While engaged with what may be called the planning of preliminary arrangements, this was not felt, but when official details required attention I suffered more than can be described. Not, however, to molest the reader with any unnecessary account of unescimated perplexities, I shall merely state that it was not, I apprehend, a very common case, for a Company, with a million of capital, to trust such a multifarious business, fraught with anxieties, to an unrecommended individual. I ought however to add, that although so fully apprised of the prejudices by which I was environed, I

experienced no hindrance in my business from them, nor had any other reason to deplore for a long time their existence, than the knowledge of the fact, as communicated in the letters of Archdeacon Strachan and the correspondence of Sir Peregrine Maitland.

In a small, new town accommodations were not easily found, but I obtained at last a room of about ten feet square for an office, for which I paid a dollar a week; and as in a colony there is never any lack of persons in quest of employment, I soon found a clerk, whom I retained as long as possible. I was obliged in the mean time to stay at a tavern myself.

The reader is probably acquainted with the manner of living in the American hotels, but without experience he can have no right notion of what in those days was the condition of the best lavern in York. It was a mean, two-story house, and being constructed of wood, every noise in it resounded from roof to foundation. The landlord, however, did all in his power to mitigate the afflictions with which such a domicile was quaking to one accustomed to quiet; but my habits were invidiously considered, and it did not require three eyes to perceive, that a natural disposition to sequestration was ascribed to pride, undervalding those among whom it was my destiny to sojourn.* Accustomed to a late dinner hour, "the feeding time" of the country did not suit me, and accordingly, instead of dining at the "ordinary at two o'clock," I dined by myself in the evening. Had I gone to the public table at first, and afterwards abstained, there might have been some reason to accuse me of pride, even though the company had not been very promiscuous, but as my servant, to whom such matters were ever left, regulated the hours with the house, I was never taught to think there was any-

^{*} I have just received a biographical sketch of me published at York, drawn up in a friendly spirit, but it speaks of me as playing "Capitain Grand," and looking down on the inhabitsons of Upper Canada. The fact is, I never thought about them, unless to notice some ludiarous peculiarity of individuals.

thing peculiar in my abstraction, until I became better acquainted with the manners of the province.

COL

per he

or

pu:

uat

cor

fix

fie

me

rai by

no

hi

to

ta

W

th

23

as

of

fi

to

of

fo

di

SE

ir

r

As soon as the indispensible domestic and official arrangements were made, I began my work of colonization, by clearing the ground, or to speak without metaphor, by obtaining information respecting the country; and no great space of time was requisite to convince me that the only system existing in the province was that which the original poverty of individual settlers had forced them to adopt. As their condition improved, their expedients were also no doubt mended; but such a thing as proceeding by a general rule, that embodied and directed collective efforts, had no existence.

My visits to the land offices of the United States, the companies and private persons, had enabled me, by seeing their various modes of management, to perceive at once which system among them was the best, and what was susceptible of improvement; and I endeavoured in consequence to institute one for the Canada Company that might work as well as any of them. I hope in presuming to say so much, it will not from the frankness which prevades this book be imagined that I claim any particular merit.

Nothing in practice seems more simple than an established routine; but like the motions of a machine, it requires some previous ingenuity to put the wheels together in such a manner as to produce the effect desired without jarring.

In avoiding what seemed to me defects in the American systems, I necessarily formed a new one, which I must believe had some advantages, since my successors have adhered to it, though their operations are on a smaller scale. One branch of it they have not even as yet had occasion to consider, namely, to excite such attention to the lands of the Company as would attract emigrants to prefer Upper Canada, though the other American provinces lay nearer to their homes;—an object with me primary; and I imagined upon theoretic principles, that to give employment to pauper emigrants ought to be the first step, before a better class

could be allured to come. Accordingly, having received permission, to attempt a settlement, I set about it comprehensively.

I directed an inspection by qualified persons of a block or tract of upwards of forty thousand acres of the Company's purchase, for the purpose of finding within it an eligible situation for a town. All reports made to me agreed in recommending the spot where Guelph now stands, and it was fixed upon; but as it was too early in the year to undertake field operations, and the immigrant season had not commenced. I went to New York to make some necessary arrangements. In this business I was most actively assisted by the British consul, indeed, to such a degree, that I could not but see he had a motive in his alacrity, so I appointed his eldest son, subject to the approval of the court of directors, agent at New York for the Company, in order to obtain the father's services.

When the causes which induced me to visit New York were adjusted, I returned to Upper Canada, and gave orders that operations should commence on St. George's Day, the 23rd of April. This was not without design; I was well aware of the boding effect of a little solemnity on the minds of most men, and especially of the unlettered, such as the first class of settlers were likely to be, at eras which betokened destiny, like the launching of a vessel, or the birth of an enterprise, of which a horoscope might be cast. The founding of a town was certainly one of these, and accordingly I appointed a national holiday for the ceremony; which secretly I was determined should be celebrated as to be held in remembrance, and yet so conducted as to be only apparently accidentally impressive.

In the mean time, as I imagined it would not be difficult to persuade the Directors to erect a central office for the Company there, and as a tavern and hotel were indispensible, I set about procuring plans.

Having myself a kind of amateur taste in architectural drawing, and being in consequence, from the period of my

travels, led to adopt as a rule in art, that the style of a building should always indicate and be appropriate to its purpose, I thought that the constructing of a city afforded an opportunity to edify posterity in this matter. Accordingly I undertook myself to draw the most problematic design of the office, and gave a house-carpenter instructions to make a plan and elevation for a tavern, delivering to him, like a Sir Oracle, my ideas as to the fitness of indicating, by the appearance of the building, the particular uses to which it was destined. My drawing was of course very classical, but his "beat all," as the Yankees say, "to immortal smash." It represented a two story common-place house, with a pediment; but on every corner and cronice, "coin and vantage," were rows of glasses, bottles, punch-bowls, and wine-decanters! Such an exhibition as did not require a man to be a god to tell it was an inn. In short, no rule was ever more unequivocally illustrated, and cannot even yet be thought of with sobriety.

CHAPTER IX.

The founding of Guelph.

On the 22nd of April, the day previous to the time appointed for laying the foundations of my projected polis, I went to Galt, a town situated on the banks of the Grand river, which my friend the Honourable William Dixon, in whose township it is situated, named after me long before the Canada Company, was imagined; it was arrived at the maturity of having a post-office before I heard of its existence. There I met by appointment at Mr. Dickson's, Dr. Dunlop,* who held a roving commission in the Canada Company and was informed that the requisite woodmen were assembled.

Next morning he walked after breakfast towards the site which had been selected. The distance was about eighteen miles from Galt, half of it in the forest, but till we came near the end of the road no accident happened. Scarcely, however, had we entered the bush, as the woods are called, when the doctor found he had lost the way. I was excessively angry, for such an incident is no trifle in the woods; but after "wandering up and down" like the two babes, with not even the comfort of a blackberry, the heavens frowning and the surrounding forest sullenly still, we discovered a hut, and "tirling at the pin," entered and found it inhabited by a Dutch shoemaker. We made him understand our lost condition, and induced him to set us on the right path. He had been in the French army, and had, after the peace, emigrated to the Unit-

^{*} Better known as The Tiger from animals his combats with these in clearing the Saugar island in the eastern Ganges; author of Sketches of Canada, by a Back-woodsman.

M

m

m

ec

of

P

a

al

fe w g a

b

C

k

ed States; thence he had come into Upper Canada, where he bought a lot of land, which, after he had made some betterments, he exchanged for the location in the woods, or as he said himself, "Je swape" the first land for the lot on which he was now settled.

With his assistance we reached the skirts of the wild to which we were going, and were informed in the cabin of a squatter* that all our men had gone forward. By this time it began to rain, but undeterred by that circumstance, we resumed our journey in the pathless wood. About sunset, dripping wet, we arrived near the spot we were in quest of, a shanty, which an Indian, who had committed murder, had raised as a refuge for himself.

It may be proper to mention here, that a shanty is a temporary shed formed of the branches of trees; such a tabernacle as Bessy Bell and Mary Gray, according to the old Scottish ballad, retired to during the prevalence of a pestilence.

"Bessy Bed and Mary Gray, They were twa bonny lasses, They bigget a bower on you burn brac And theekit it o'er wi' rashes."

We tound the men, under the orders of Mr. Prior, whom I had employed for the Company, kindling a roaring fire, and after endeavouring to dry ourselves, and having recourse to the store-basket, I proposed to go to the spot chosen for the town. By this time the sun was set, and Dr. Dunlop, with his characteristic drollery, having doffed his wet garb, and dressed himself Indian fashion, in blankets, we proceeded with Mr. Prior, attended by two woodmen with their axes.

It was consistent with my plan to invest our ceremony with a little mystery, the better to make it be remembered. So intimating that the main body of the men were not to come we walked to the brow of the neighbouring rising ground, and

^{*} A squatter is a settler who takes possession of land without purchase or license. This was also a Dutchman, and he had made his "pitch" on the Company's land.

Mr. Prior having shewn the site selected for the town, a large maple tree was chosen; on which, taking an axe from one of the woodmen, I struck the first stroke. To me at least the moment was impressive,—and the silence of the woods, that echoed to the sound, was as to the sigh of the solemn genius of the wilderness departing for ever.

The doctor followed me, then, if I recollect correctly, Mr. Prior, and the woodmen finished the work. The tree fell with a crash of accumulating thunder, as if ancient Nature were alarmed at the entrance of social man into her innocent solitudes with his sorrows, his follies, and his crimes.

I do not suppose that the sublimity of the occasion was unfelt by the others, for I noticed that after the tree fell, there was a funereal pause, as when the coffin is lowered into the grave; it was, however, of short duration, for the doctor pulled a flask of whiskey from his bosom, and we drank prosperity to the City of Guelph.

The name was chosen in compliment to the royal family, both because I thought it auspicious in itself, and because I could not recollect that it had ever been before used in all the king's dominions.

After the solemnity, for though the ceremony was simple it may be so denominated, we returned to the shanty, and the rain, which had been suspended during the performance, began again to pour.

It may appear ludicrous to many readers, that I look on this incident with gravity, but in truth I am very serious; for although Guelph is not so situated as ever to become celebrated for foreign commerce, the location possesses many advantages independent of being situated on a tongue of land surrounded by a clear and rapid stream. It will be seen by the map of the province, that it stands almost in the centre of the table-land, which separates four of the great lakes, namely Ontario, Simcoe, Huron, and Eric, and though its own river, the Speed, as I named it, is not large, yet at the town it re-

It to

of

ed

tic

OCC

w

an a 7

de

en

ue

an

W

th

SO

ha

ra

CI

to

ab

h

e

11

n

ceives the Eramosa, and at a short distance flows into the Grand River, which may be said to be navigable from the bridge of Galt to lake Erie, a distance of nearly eighty miles By the Welland canal the navigation is continued to lake Ontario, thence by the Rideau canal to the Grand Ottawa, which flows into the St. Lawrence, and by the Lachine canal it communicates with Montreal and thence to the ocean, advantages which few inland towns in the whole world can boast of at such a distance from the sea.

In planning the city, for I will still dignify it by that title though applied at first in derision, I had, like the lawyers in establishing their fees, an eye to futurity in the magnitude of the parts. A beautiful central hill was reserved for the Catholics, in compliment to my friend, Bishop Macdonell, for his advice in the formation of the Company; the centre of a rising ground, destined to be hereafter a square, was appropriated to the Episcopal church for Archdeacon Strachan; and another rising ground was reserved for the Presbyterians.—The Catholic church is building, also the Presbyterian, and I believe the foundations of the Episcopalian are laid.

Education is a consideration so important to a community that it obtained my earliest attention, and accordingly in planting the town 1 stipulated that the half of the price of the building sites should be appropriated to endow a school, undertaking that the Company, in the first instance, should sustain the expense of the building, and be gradually repaid by the sale of the town lots. The school-house was thus among the first buildings undertaken to draw settlers.

The works and the roads soon drew from all parts a greater influx of inhabitants than was expected, insomuch that the rise of the town far surpassed my hopes. The population now exceeds, I am informed, a thousand souls; mills projected have been built, a respectable bridge constructed, several taverns and a ball-room, and as a mark of the improved society, there are, I have heard, several harps and piano-fortes in the town.

It was with me matter of design to give a superior character to the place, and therefore, although the first settlers were not of that rank of life to make such things important, I encouraged dances and public associations among them. But I am anticipating that which ought to be deferred, as I shall have occasion to speak of these sort of things hereafter, for as yet, where the town is now spreading, all was then a wilderness, and nothing would seem so romantic as the building of such a Tadmor in the desert. The site is between the Company's detached lots, and its tracts, and Huron territory, and the seventh part of all the townships around belong to it.

Before the foundations of the town were laid, land was valued by the magistrates in quarter sessions at 1s. 3d. per acre, and the settled townships around at three-fourths of a dollar; when I left the place the lowest rate of land sold was 15s. and the price in the neighbouring townships was estimated at 10s.

Nearly, if not all the land in the township of Guelph is now sold, and all the houses which I ordered to be constructed, have also been at prime cost.

d

I

It was not, certainly, my plan to sell the lands around so rapidly, nor do I think it was judicious, for the value was increasing as the country around became settled. But Guelph to resume a little more freedom, was, like all cities fated with a high destiny, the cause of quarrels; Romulus slew his brother for hopping over the walls of Rome, and although the history of my city is not likely to be honoured by warlike events, it yet gave rise to a controversy as worthy of commemoration, for from the day that I announced the birth of this metropolis to the directors of the Canada Company, my troubles and vexations began, and were accumulated on my unsheltered head till they could be no longer endured.

CHAPTER X.

Plan of taking payments in produce. Apply for a valuable grant of land to the government, and obtain it.

WHEN I had effectually set the operations for the Canada Company a going at Guelph, I returned to York, and took into-consideration a step to which the Company was pledged to the public and the government.

Among the inducements held out to obtain the reserves at a moderate price, was the vast advantages which would arise to the province from having an opulent Company interested in promoting its improvement. One of the most obvious modes of accomplishing this was, as it appeared to me, to receive payments in produce, and to undertake the sale of it on consignment. By an arrangement contemplated, in the event of the directors agreeing to this, I conceived that the commissions on the consignments of wheat would defray all the official expenses, and a stimulus would be given to the prosperity of the province, which would soon compensate the country for all the profit that might be drawn from it in consequence of the Company's speculation. Accordingly, having settled a plan for carrying the business into effect, and ascertained what would be the most convenient points to have receiving houses established, I endeavoured to find whether it would be necessary to erect stores or to rent them.

In my inquiries I found that by far the most eligible situation for the purpose of erecting a central store was on the banks of a canal, which the government was excavating through a narrow neck of land, to open Burlington Bay into lake Ontario. It occurred to me, when my attention was drawn to this situation, that the land would be soon occupied,

and although still in the hands of the government, would not be allowed to remain long so.

I therefore determined to make an application for a grant to the Company of this valuable and most eligible site. The business admitting of no delay, I made the solicitation for the grant, and explained in my letter the purpose for which it was solicited, namely, to erect stores, &c., for the reception of produce.

In sending in this application, it being necessary to transmit it by the hands of the governor's secretary, I sent it to Major Hillier, with the following private letter to himself.

" York, 3d May, 1827.

"MY DEAR SIR,

n-

0-

to

at

se

ed

us

e-

it

he

he

all

08-

he

n-

ng

as-

ve

it

tu-

he

ng ito

7as

ed,

"Inclosed is an official application to the Lieutenant-governor for a portion of the Burlington Bay Peninsula. I have gone a little more into the particulars of my object than perhaps was necessary; but I was desirous that his Excellency should have in the application the motive by which I was actuated in making it for this special reason, -I should be exceedingly glad coave it in my power to say, that the three or four acres would be given to the Company, for I do assure you that various circumstances have made many connected with the Company not at all satisfied with the opposition which it is conceived has been shown towards the general interests of the incorporation, as it now is, from influential persons in this province. I have myself, since the question of the clergy reserves was quieted by the new contract, seen no cause whatever to be of that opinion, and I have availed myself of every occasion to speak to the directors of the satisfaction which I enjoy in reference to the few inconsiderable points that I have had occasion to trouble the government with. Considering the Company's stake in this country, one seventh at least of the whole real property, it is naturally expected that a frank, confidential communication should take place with the Directors, who though not possessed of any political power here have yet some at home, and rumours have Vol. II. F.

reached some of them, to which I might have been so placed as to have applied a contradiction. The transactions in the stock of the Company have practically been very detrimental to many, and it has actually fallen, partly in consequence to what I allude, to a discount. For myself, it will probably surprise his Excellency to hear I have no interest in the matter.

"I do not know if it is of any consequence to apprise his Excellency that I am likely to remain in the country in a still more anomalous situation* than that of my present mission. In asking to be so permitted, you may tell his Excellency, that among other motives, I was desirous of practically contradicting falsehoods at variance with the uniform tenour of my whole life—falsehoods, the invention of which only served to prove the ignorance of the inventors as to the character of an individual, who from his very boyhood has neither been obscure nor in his sentiments equivocal.

"Yours, faithfully,

" JOHN GALT."

" Major Hillier."

Unquestionably I had every reason to be satisfied with the facilities which the local government could afford to whatever I applied for; nor did I then think that this was in consequence of making no unreasonable request; but however that may be, all were promptly attended to and readily granted.

The letter was sent in to the government office, and the grant was made without delay. I think it was for three acres—much the most valuable spot in the whole province. It fronted the canal; on the right it had Burlington Bay, and

^{*} This is said in allusion to the reason which had been given to me, to think I was invidiously regarded in the province, from Dr. Strachan's letter, to the obvious inference deducible from my early correspondence with Sir P. Maltland, and to the light in which I was at first represented by some of the government papers. It is but proper to mention, however, that upon my requesting the note of thanks for M'Kenzie's file of newspapers to be published, an ample apology was made in the papers for the erroneous construction put upon the transaction. My situation, however, was very confortless, and nothing would have kept me in the province after my mission was closed, but the conviction that I should be able to contradict by my conduct the charges and insinuations. I wrote this letter not only to show how satisfied I was in one respect with my treatment, but also to intimate how deeply I felt the injustice of the unfounded prejudice against me.

on the left lake Ontario, a more convenient spot for any commercial purpose in a new country could not be chosen. It gave me unspeakable pleasure to have obtained for the Company so great a boon, and I expressed to the directors my satisfaction at the liberal treatment of the government; it was not necessary to be more particular.

I entreat the reader to notice this circumstance, and to remember particularly the course pursued and the object attained; but above all, to bear in mind the allusion to the calumnies which formed the burthen of Sir Peregrine Maitland's correspondence on my arrival, and of the existence of them which I had been made previously aware of by Archdeacon Strachan's letter from Edinhurgh.

CHAPTER XI.

Voyage on Lake Huron.

HAVING matured the plan for receiving consignments of produce, and transmitted to the directors in London the necessary outline, I resolved upon such an inspection of the Company's Huron tract as was conceived to be necessary before the location could be finally determined. In consequence Dr. Dunlop, who was instructed to superintend this undertaking, assembled at Galt fit persons and surveyors to accompany him into the forest. And as foreseen, when it was proposed to take the tract as a substitute for the clergy reserves I went forward from York to Penetanguishine, to embark there in a navy vessel which had orders to proceed with me, to explore that part of the coast of Lake Huron between Cabot's Head on the north, and the river Aux Sables on the south; but as this voyage of discovery was episodical to my other operations, I have drawn up a separate account of the excursion, and will insert it here, as affording in itself a complete narrative:

VOYAGE ON LAKE HURON.

I left York, the capital of Upper Canada, to explore that part of the coast between Cabot's Head and the river Aux Sables, in order to discover if possible a harbour, and to meet at the mouth of one of the rivers a numerous party that had been previously sent from the town of Galt to inspect an unknown region, of which one million of acres were assigned in a tract to the Canada Company. I took the route by Younge Street, a road which leads in a direct line to Lake Simcoe, and halt ed for the night at a town not far from where on the right, New

market is situated. The appearance of the country is not very propossessing, but the views are more picturesque than many more celebrated places, for on the upland you command a distant prospect of Lake Ontario, and though the forest predominates, the surface is various and undulated.

In the neighbourhood of Newmarket the fields are tolerably well cleared, but I was led to conclude that the soil was not fertile, as many of them were in grass and full of undecayed stumps. This apparent negligence, however, might be owing to other causes. The village itself is pleasantly situated, and an air of older settlement is observable about it than in many parts of the province of greater antiquity, if such a term may be applied to any thing of British origin in America; but as the evening was closing before we reached our inn I must be understood here as speaking very cursorily of the country.

Next morning we went forward to a place on the Holland river, called Holland's landing, an open space which the Indians and fur traders were in the habit of frequenting. It presented to me something of a Scottish aspect in the style of the cottages, but instead of mountains the environs were covered with trees. We embarked at this place.

After descending the river we steered across Lake Simcoe, the boatmen during the time amused us in the stillness of the evening with those French airs which Moore has rendered so popular by his Canadian boat songs. At a dark, if not a late hour, we reached a house frequented by the Indian traders, where we stayed the remainder of the night: our reception was very primitive, but the civility of the inmates did much to reconcile us to the best they could give.— In point of accommodation it reminded me of a night spent long ago in Greece, on the shores of the gulf of Eubœa, but the comparison, though not much, was in favour of the Grecian cottage.

By dawn of day, we were informed that the boatmen were F 2*

ready, and immediately embarked: a vapour lay on the tops of the trees, and circumscribed our view, showing enough-however, to remind us that we were in a far country. The mist prevented me from seeing the outline of the adjacent land, but the situation of the house reminded me of Rhuardinnan at the foot of Ben-Lomond in Scotland.

Our progress over the still lake in a fresh and serene morning, was delightful; not a breath ruffled the face of the waters, and all around us "looked tranquillity." In this little voyage I remember an incident which at the time impressed me with a curious emotion. A vast moth as big as a bird flew over the boat in perfect silence, its course and appearance was not like any "creature of the element," and my imagination exalted it into an imp of darkness flying homeward.

We then turned to the coast of Innisfail, on which I had a grant of land, but as we had a long voyage and journey before us, we only touched there to speak to a settler who had hailed us as we passed. From him I learnt that several clearances as the cutting down of the timber is called, were then afoot, and a few settlers had recently arrived.

Having conversed with him some time we steered for Kempenfelt Bay, and had another sight that could only be met with in America, a squaw with several Indian children, crossing the lake in a canoe steered by a negro! My imagination surely was given to dark fancies, for I could not help comparing the transit of this party in that gray and silent morning, with something of another, I will not say, a "better world."

We ascended Kempenfelt Bay, or more properly Gulph, nearly to the head, where we met horses with our luggage, which had come through the forest by a tract recently opened, a great convenience in summer; in winter the lake is frozen, and travellers pass on the ice.

From the spot where we disembarked, I proceeded along a road which was opened by a party during the late war under the command of Dr. Dunlop, whom I was to meet on lake Huron,

tut the forest glade was nearly again impassable by the new vegetation, and we were obliged to travel it in single file.

About half way to Penetanguishine we were compelled by the weather to take shelter in a farm-house, and a thunderstorm coming on obliged us to remain all night. The house itself was not inferior to a common Scottish cottage, but it was rendered odious by the landlady, who was all the time we stayed, "drunk as a sow, Huncamunca."

Next day we proceeded to the military station and dockyard of Penetanguishine by a path through the woods, which, to the honour of the late Mr. Wilberforce, bears his name.—Along it are settled several negro families. As I walked part of the way, I went into a cottage pleasantly situated on a rising ground, and found it inhabited by a crow-like flock of negro children; the mother was busy with them, and the father, a good-natured looking fellow, told me that they were very comfortable, but had not yet made any great progress in clearing the land, as his children were still too young to assist.

We reached Penetanguishine, the remotest and most inland dockyard that owns obedience to the "meteor flag of England," where, by orders of the Admiralty, His Majesty's gun boat the Bee was placed at my disposal. By the by, the letter from the Admiralty was a curious specimen of the geographical knowledge which then prevailed there, inasmuch as it mentioned that the vessel was to go with me on Lake Huron, in Lower Canada.

In the village of Penetanguishine there is no tavern; we were therefore obliged to billet ourselves on the officer stationed there, of whose hospitality and endeavour to make the time pass agreeably till he had the Bee ready for the lake, I shall ever retain a pleasant remembrance.

The next day we went to fish in Gloucester Bay, and anchored the boat on a small rocky island, but as fishing is a tedious occupation to me, the less said about it the better.—Isaac Walton, for all he writes so prettily, must have been

very sleepy-headed animal. We caught, however, a few black bass, and returned to the dockyard to dinner.

In the evening we walked about the environs, and saw where future fortifications were marked out.

The following day, though the wind was not very fair we embarked on board the Bee, and had a backwards and forwards sailing and tacking in Gloucester Bay, not disagreeable to those who like such kind of pastime. In the evening a violent storm obliged Captain Douglas to cast anchor in a small sheltered bay of an island. It was no doubt as wild as that of Robinson Crusoe. We lighted a fire on the shore, and regaled ourselves with tea or hot grog as we felt inclined.

The scene and occupation recalled vividly to my recollection an adventure of my boyish days on Inchmoan, an island in Loch Lomond in Dumbartonshire. With others, I procured a boat at Greenock, sailed from the Clyde up the water of Leven, which Smollett has immortalized, and spent a week upon Loch Lomond. The weather was unsettled and showery; the distant hills

"Alternate smiled and flowned,"

and for the night we landed on the island with the intention of raising a tent with our sails, but as good luck would have it, there was a deserted farm house which we took possession of, and kindled a fire in the middle of the floor, over which we suspended a kettle by a rope; having made a supper from our store basket, with hot punch, we stretched ourselves around on the floor, setting a ward and watch at the door, changed every hour. In the morning the wind had become calm and instead of taking breakfast in the house, we kindled a fire under a tree, and suspended our kettle from a branch. While enjoying ourselves at an early hour in a beautiful gray morning, a boat with passengers sailed by, and on the opposite island at a little distance, the red deer looked out at us from the wood we then steered for Rhuardinnan, where we passed

the night; in the morning we ascended Ben Lomond, and after jocundly enjoying the far seen mountain-top, we descended the precipice at the back, and passed the night in a house at the sources of the river Forth, from which, by another route, we returned next day to our boat at Rhuardinnan,—but it is not that 'joyous excursion on the Highland lake that I have to describe.

I may be pardoned this digression, recalled to recollection by the houseless shores and shipless seas around, but still more by the scene on that island, in all respects so similar to the one I had seen more than thirty years before.

Next morning, the waters of Lake Huron were unmolested by the wind, and we sailed towards Cabot's Head, deviating a little from our direct course to view the islands of the Flower Pots, lofty rocks which rise from the lake, shaped like such utensils, and bearing a gigantic bouquet of trees.

We then bore away for Cabot's Head, with the sight of which I was agreeably disappointed, having learned something of its alleged stormy features, and expected to see a lofty promontory; but the descriptions were much exaggerated, we saw only a woody stretch of land not very lofty, lying calm in the sunshine of a still afternoon, and instead of dark clouds and lurid lightnings, beheld only beauty and calm.

Having doubled this "Good Hope" of the lakes, we then kept close along shore examining all the coast with care, but we could discover only the mouths of inconsiderable streams, and no indentation that to our inspection appeared suitable for a harbour.

In the afternoon of the following day, we saw afar off by our telescope, a small clearing in the forest, and on the brow of a rising ground a cottage delightfully situated. The appearance of such a sight in such a place was unexpected, and we had some debate, if it could be the location of Dr. Dunlop, who had guided the land exploring party already alluded to, nor were we left long in doubt, for on approaching

ti

ti

al

e:

n

h

86

C

tl

a

I

a

p

S

p

C

I

tl

a

tl

n M

the place, we met a canoe having on board a strange combination of Indians, velveteens and whiskers, and discovered within the roots of the red hair, the living features of the Doctor. About an hour after having crossed the river's bar of eight feet, we came to a beautiful anchorage of fourteen feet water, in an uncommonly pleasant small basin. The place had been selected by the Doctor, and is now the site of the flourishing town of Godrich, and which, from being the only port for a fertile country within many miles, and many millions of acres, must, as civilization progresses westward, become an important location.

Here we landed, and cheerfully spent the night in the log cottage which the Doctor had raised, damped, however, a little in our hilarity, by learning that the horses having taken it into their heads to stray into the forest, were at that moment lost to the explorers, and "wandering up and down."

Among other things which tended to make our success in finding a haven agreeable, was the production of a bottle of champagne, probably the first wine drunk on that remote spot, but not for that so remarkable as the cause. In the winter preceding, the Doctor and I returning late to York from Quebec, found curselves hungry and exhausted; all the shops and taverns were closed, nevertheless, to wait till the morning in a semi-Christian and without refreshment, was impossible, so we sent out my servant to forage. After ransacking all houses admissible at such an hour, he returned, bringing with him two large frozen herrings or powans, and two bottles of champagne. The herrings were soon cooked, and one of the bottles disscussed; the other was that which we drank on the coast of Lake Huron, and which, unknown to me, had been preserved for many months for this occasion.

Next day we explored the river in which the Bee was anchored, and had the gratification of seeing, as we ascended, several pleasant meadows without a tree, and islands and peninsulas that reminded us of the pleasantest parts of England.—The following evening we again embarked, and sailing down

the lake, expected to reach Detroit on the 4th of July,* but the weather was calm, and when we sailed into the river St. Clair, though the stream ran strong, the wind rose against us, and our passage down was disagreeable. We landed, however, just as the American lighthouse was kindled for the night, but found it a mean place, and the adjacent houses, that had attracted our attention in the twilight, ruinous and deserted; we therefore returned to the vessel and resumed our course.

Having sailed down the shallow lake of St. Clair, where the land was level almost with the water, and the views around domestic and inviting, we at last entered the river of Detroit, where a large tree on the American side scroes for a beacon.

The shores of the river Detroit are among the oldest settled parts of America; the town was founded by the French in the same year that William Penn laid the foundation of Philadelphia, and the aspect of the place, with its large decayed church, resembles an old European town. As you approach Detroit, the banks of the river are like those of the Scheldt in the neighbourhood of Antwerp, and, as seen from the water, are not inferior to those of that often contested stream.

At this time, the view was rendered particularly lively by hundreds of Indians with their families assembled to receive the annual presents with which they are cajoled to quit their country and to retire from before the unprincipled policy of Christian white men.

After all our endeavours, we were too late for seeing the American festival; we did not arrive at Detroit till break of day of the 5th; we immediately landed however, and found a new and elegant hotel, near to which a steamboat was lying. My business at the Land Office there obliged me to stop for the day, but the weather was fine, and my companions found themselves agreeably entertained.

In the evening I went to the Catholic priest and inquired

1

^{*} The great American festival.

for the Bishop of Rhæsina, who I had learned was somewhere in that quarter, and I was gratified to hear he was staying at a seminary on the English side. As this very estimable man was a valued friend, I immediately got the boat of the vessel manned to visit him, but as we sailed down the river we happened to miss each other. In the morning, however, he returned, and as the head of the American Land office had been very accommodating to me, I invited him to dine with us, and our whole party, with the bishop, spent a cheerful afternoon.

When his lordship returned to his domicile we went to the theatre, which was then open and were agreeably surprised at our reception. The men from the Bee were in the house. and seeing Captain Douglas in uniform, the chief seats were given to us, and the orchestra struck up "Rule Britannia," and "God save the King." This circumstance, so incredible from the notions we had been led to form of the American character, greatly surprised us, and though it savours of vanity, I am irresistibly led to mention that I was particularly solaced afterwards by a number of Scottish airs. The fact was, that one of the players knew something of me, and he had suggested this mode of complimenting the visitors. Be it remarked, that this was the first time that the theatre was opened for performance after the celebration of the Anniversary of the American separation from Great Britain.

The following afternoon we left the Bee to make the best of her way back to Penetanguishine, and embarked for Buffaloe in the steam-boat.

While at Detroit my attention was drawn to a small boat propelled by wheels, like a steam boat, the paddles being moved by treddles under the feet of the lad who steered.*

There is a picture by Raphael, representing an incident in the story of

^{*} I have noticed this invention in a note, when speaking of the team-hoat from Troy on the Hudson; the paddle wheels are similar to those of the steam-hoat, and indeed save in the moving power, the boats are of the same genus. It is a curious fact, that the paddle wheel, an invention of the ancients, like the saw, the are, or the plough, seems to have attained at once perfection, issuing complete from the brain, like Minerva armed, from the head of Jove.

As the weather was blustering on Lake Erie, I was very sick, and could see nothing; but at Cleaveland we took on board a number of passengers remarkably well dressed and well bred; they proved to be citizens, chiefly from Virginia. One of them very kindly invited me to visit him, much more than a thousand miles off,—such is the conveyance by steam. -and mentioned that they had come round by New Orleans, and were then only ten days in coming up the Mississippi and the other river which brought them to embark on Lake Erie. They were going to Quebec.

At Buffaloe we landed after a disagreeable passage of two days, and remained only long enough there to see the place

Acis, and Galatea, in which the paddle wheel is introduced. "She is borne," says my authority, "in a shell drawn by dolphins,' and it has been supposed that the painter invented the wheel, but that is a mistake, it is much older. Raphael died in 1520. In 1543 Velasco de Garay, a Spaniard, exhibited a paddle-wheel boat to the Emperor Charles V. on the 17th of June, at Barcelona. Moreover this boat was also a steam boat, and the Spaniards may claim the invention in defiance of the Americans and us. In 1578, the method of propelling boats by external wheels was mentioned in a publication by William Bourne, the portreeve of Gravesend But the suggestion of using steam as it is done by the moderns, is supposed to have been made by a Frenchman, De Caus, prior to the year 1624. Giovanni Branca, an Italian philosopher, made however a similar discovery

It is commonly supposed that the Marquis of Worcester, about 1655, discovered both the steam engine and the steam-boat, and one Jonathan Hull in the year 1736, certainly did inventatug boat of the steam species, though it came to no effect. After Hull, the Marquis de Jouffrey made also the same discovery. In 1781, he constructed a steam-boat at Lyons. But to no man does the present improved state of steam navigation owe so

much as to Mr. Symington.

In 1795, the late Lord Stanhope, however, moved a boat be steam. But it is no longer disputable, that Mr. Henry Bell of Glasgow, and Mr. Fulton of America, to whom the practical application of the discovery owes so much derived their knowledge of the steam-boat from witnessing the experiments of Mr. Symington.

It is strange that machinery should have been so long neglected in navigation, and still more that the power of steam should have been so little ap-

phed till our own time, for it is an old discovery, and was employed by Hero of Alexandria, it is said, two centuries before the Christianera.

In this note a curious question may be put. Has it ever been tried to drive paddle-wheels by the wind-mill? By substituting the wind-mill for the steam-engine, the toneare occupied by the fuel would be saved, and it would matter not whether the wind blew foul or fair. The ingenious idea of employing the wind-mill as propelling power in navigation is not mine.

^{*} Mr. Galt repeats without investigation the old and refuted story on this subject. Fulton exhibited in a court of law conclusive evidence of his having submitted a plan similar to that which he afterwards carried into effect, to Lord Stanhope, in 1795, six years prior to the experiment of Symington .- Editor. Vol. II. G

and its environs, staying at the Eagle tavern as a private party, for one does not always meet in the United States with such accommodation as is provided there. The house is larger, and somewhat resembles York House at Bath; if the palm of superiority must be awarded, I think the Eagle tavern at Buffaloe the best house of the two.

Buffaloe is a very prosperous and handsome town, and will be, I should think, a large place, as it stands at the head of the long canal that traverses the state of New York to Albany; though I have heard since that the Welland canal is becoming a formidable rival to it, especially in the carrying trade from the western country.

We then crossed in an extra, as they call a post coach, the swift current of the Niagara river, and arrived in due time at the hotel at the Falls, where we accidentally met with Captain Basil Hall, his lady, child, and servants, returning from the Southern states.

Thus ends the narrative of a voyage of discovery, in which no hardship was sufferred, and much pleasure enjoyed.

CHAPTER XII.

A stipulation in the Company's contract with Government.— Curious stratagem. Reflections. Visit Guelph. Visitors. Exploring the Grand River. Return to York.

On my return to York, from the inspection of the coast of Lake Huron, an event took place which, remembering the invidia that surrounded me, sank deep into my bosom, and was corrosive to feeling.

In arranging the terms of agreement for the Canada Company with the Secretary of State, it was covenanted that the Company should have no claim to reserves on which public works were erected. Nothing could be more reasonable, and no objection was made to the stipulation; but it happened soon after my return, a surveyor came to the office and made an offer for a lot of land at Penetanguishine, which, as his price was liberal, I determined to accept at once; according ly, his application went through the requisite official examinations.

In the mean time I told him if the land were found to belong to the Company, his offer would be accepted. What further passed I do not now recollect, but while he was speaking with me the clerk had ascertained that the royal stores and dockyards were situated on the lot. So palpable a stratagem instantly roused me, and I reproached the man for attempting to procure the land, telling him that it was reserved.

Something in his manner convinced me that he was only an agent in the business, and I at once taxed him with my suspicion, having become indignant at so barefaced a trick to take me in. At last he confessed that he had been employed by others, and "proclaiming his malefactions," asked my pardon. That afternoon, without any particularity, I wrote to the government office that the land was reserved by the contract, referring only to that circumstance.

Why recourse was had to such a surreptitious mode of management I know not, but it occasioned ruminations not pleasant; except, however, to buy the land as for himself, by the surveyor, there was not much to complain of. But the more I reflected on the transaction, I became convinced it implied an apprehension of something unworthy of me, and as feathers in the air show the course of the wind, I became satisfied, in my own mind, that there was yet no disposition to treat me with that confidence which I deserved. Towards my trust every thing went agreeably, for I took care to be abstemious in my requests; but this strange endeavour proved, as I conceived, a dread that I would take some sort of an unfair advantage if aware of the dockvard and stores being on the lot. It was as strong a proof as could be given that the sentiments which I felt it my duty to cherish towards the government were not reciprocal.

I meditated on the transaction,—there was no end to my wonder. I did not consider the affair as in itself scrious, but could not mistake the indication. At last I grew angry at myself for making so much of it; but I could not resist the recurrence, for I had no books to withdraw my mind, and knowing how I had been traduced, however secretly, to Sir P. Maitland, I visited no one without a special invitation.

It is not possible to make the reader comprehend how I could be troubled in mind with such a mere phantasy, nor can I account for it now; but it afflicted me like a calamity not to be shaken off.

After staying some time on official business at York, I went to Guelph, to inspect the improvements, of which I had appointed Mr. Prior the overseer and manager, and was gratified at the condition of every thing.

While there I received a visit from Bishop Macdonell and

the provincial Inspector-general, the first visitors to the new settlement; and when they had left me, other friends from Edinburgh, with ladies, came also in, for the works being on a great scale, were now becoming objects of curiosity. Not being restricted in any means which could be employed in the country, I certainly did indulge myself in the rapidity of creation. As an instance, when the strangers were with me, I desired the woodmen to open one of the projected streets, and they effected a clearing, greater than the avenue in Kensington Gardens, the trees much larger, in an hour and minutes.*

ar-

the

on-

of

not

by

the

ind

me

to

rds

be

ed.

un-

on

the

ov-

my but

at

the ind

to

on.

νI

an

not

ent ap-

at-

ind

it

With my Edinburgh friends I rode to Galt, resolving, after giving some orders, to return to the office at York; but on reaching Mr. Dickson's, we heard of the Earl of Liverpool's misfortune, and the formation of the Canning ministry, which we determined to commemorate. Accordingly, as the Grand River never had been properly explored, we caused a scow to be built to descend the stream, and embarking at the bridge of Galt, set out with the current to name the most remarkable islands and headlands in its course.

The day was bright and beautiful, and the trees seemed

^{*} The glory of Guelph was unparallelled, but, like all earthly glories, it was destined to pass away. It consisted of a glade, opened through the forest, about seven miles in length, upwards of one bundred and thirty feet in with, forming an avenue, with trees on each side far exceeding in height the most supendous in England.

The high road to the town lay along the middle of this Babylonian approach, which was cut so wide as to admit the sun and air, and was intended to be fenced of the usual breadth, the price of the land contiguous to be such as to defray the expense of the clearing

In America, the timber felled in inland places is burnt off, and the wrecks of the forest in this "arborous vast" underwent the process.

But the imagination fothers when it would a tempt to depict the magnificent effect of the golden sun shiring through the colossal vista of smoke and flames;—the woodmen dimly seen moving in "the palpable obscure," with their axes glancing along in the distance. A Yankee post boy who once drove me to Guelph, on emerging from the dark and savage wood, looked be hind in astonishment as we entered the opening, and clapping has hands with delight, exclaimed "What an Almignty place!"

By doing speedity and collectively works which in detail would not have heen remarkable, these superb effects were obtained. They brought "to home" the wandering emigrants, gave them employment, and by the wonder at their greatness, magnified the importance of the improvements. This gigantic vision did not cost much more than the publication of a novel.

pleased to see themselves in the clear flowing water. I do not now, however, recollect all the names we gave to the different points. One peninsula, however, that was an island when the snows melted, we called "Eldon's Doubt;" another bold bluff promontory, overlooking a turbulence in the stream, we named "Canning's Front; and a violent rapid was hailed, in honour of one whom I could not but consider accessary to our being in such wilds, as "Horton's Hurries." But it would seem the name was not well taken, for in sailing over it, a rock in the most spiteful manner so damaged the scow, that she was more than half full before we could get the ladies landed in a little bay where, the water at the brink was only eight feet deep.

By this time it was sunset, and we had to travel the forest for some distance before reaching a clearing, at last we got to a farm-house of one Walter Scott, who came, of all places in the world, from Selkirk. We staid with him that night, and as there is a shallow in the Grand River near his house, we called it Abbotsford. We then proceeded to Brantsford, the Indian village, and thence into the purlieus of civilization, from which, by the pretty breezy town of Ancaster on the hill, I went on alone to York.

Narratives of this kind are not uninteresting, though they seem in nothing influential; for it is, at least, as curious to know from what things, as well as books, a man derives his knowledge. This descent of the Grand River furnished me afterwards with the idea of that similar excursion, which I have described in Laurie Told.

CHAPTER XIII.

Remove to Burlington Bay.—La Guyerian Emigrants.— Festival at Guelph. Reflections.

About this time I found the distance between York and the seat of the chief expenditure for the Canada Company so great, as to render it expedient to make my head-quarters half-way. In consequence I took a house at the head of the lake conveniently situated and soon removed to it.

I had not been long settled in this domicile, when one Sunday morning a deputation came to me, from a body I think, in all, of fifty-seven emigrants, who had come from New York, where they had been landed from La Guayra in South America. They were part of the settlers whom the Columbian Company had enticed to transport themselves to that region where being disappointed and reduced to great necessity, they were for a time obliged to subsist on charity, and were ultimately sent by the consul there to Mr. Buchanan, the British consul at New York. On their arrival, knowing my scheme of a new settlement, he sent them on to Upper Canada to me.

I was not provided with money to support pauper emigrants, and had no instructions for such an emergency, nor could I discern why Mr. Buchanan had passed by the Government of the province, and sent these miserable creatures to me. But the emergency admitted of no delay. They could not be sent back to Mr. Buchanan, and the provincial Government was fifty miles distant, and could not be consulted. I considered that as the Company had work, it would be do-

to tit ver

not ent ent old we in

lavas

est to in ind we

the on, the

to his ne I ing service to Government to employ these people, according. ly directed them to proceed to Mr. Prior at Guelph, till I had time to consider their case.

Accordingly they went on, but when I was informed that the greatest number of them were women and children, and all weak and many sickly, I saw that the earnings of the men would not be sufficient to support them. From motives, however, partly of humanity, and partly out of consideration that though they had been thoughtlessly sent to me, they were in fact under the protection of Government, I determined to keep a thousand pounds back of a payment to Government, until the matter was adjusted, and wrote the Governor to this effect, but went next day to York to see the Receiver-general, to ascertain from him what would be the effect of making an impending payment so much short. From him I learnt that it would be exceedingly inconvenient, as he depended on the funds; I therefore agreed to pay him the whole amount under an understanding that the thousand pounds was in doubt for the La Guavrians, until the business was cleared up. This arrangement the Governor could not know, but it shews by what spirit I was actuated. When his answer arrived, he condemned me for keeping back the money, as I expected he would do, but having provided against any public inconvenience, no importance was attached to his displeasure, conscious that there were circumstances enough in the case to justify my irregularity. I cannot, however, yet know how it happened, but in an uncommonly short period I received what I believe was a kind of reprimand from home for passing by the local government.-However, when I am conscious of the rectitude of my intentions, I never scruple

> " for a great good To do a little wrong."

I had not passed by the local government; on the contrary, I had done all in my power to prevent it from feeling any inconvenience by what was done.

But this was not all: it was found that the La Guayrian emi-

grants would make tolerable settlers, and in consequence I directed Mr. Prior to get houses built for them, and to assign them farms of fifty acres each, at the usual price in the township, but in consequence of their poverty to waive the first payment, and to give them all on credit, they paying interest at six per cent. for the boon.

Just at this time I was informed from various quarters that the Directors disapproved of my extensive proceedings, at Guelph, but I paid no other attention to the rumours than to hamper Mr. Prior, whose greatest fault was to see things too well done. Moreover, on considering the dates, I saw that the reports must be of colonial fabrication, for the account of my undertakings could not have reached London. This fact, which made me disregard the rumours, increased my heartburning, for I could not doubt that I had enemies in the province still, and my affliction was exasperated by a new cause.

In the houses for the La Guayrian emigrants, Mr. Prior, in a landable spirit, but to me from all these things most vexatious, contracted to build better habitations than were requisite. In consequence I refused to ratify the contracts, but agreed to allow payment of the outlay that might have been incurred. From some oversight, the clerk of the works charged the emigrants with the outlay, but forgot to give Mr. Prior credit for the same, and his demand on the Company was resisted, chiefly I believe through the mistaken misrepresentations of the accountant. However, I have since heard from one of the Directors that the La Guayrian emigrants have paid most of the thousand pounds,—probably by this time all is paid, with interest at six per cent. Soon after this business was settled, I appointed the 12th of August as a kind of fair in the new town, invited a number of friends, and gave a public dinner in the market-house to the inhabitants; for it required not the wisdom of Solomon to see that occasional amusements were necessary to promote content, and I have always had a peculiar enjoyment in the hilarity of others. But the 12th of August

ng. nad

hat ind ien w-

hat in to nt, his

al, ng rnt led

in up. ws he he

fy p-I ne

I 1was not chosen without design: it was the king's birthday, celebrated in the first town of the family name; the anniversary of the day on which the Canada Company was instituted; the anniversary also of my father and mother's wedding; the birthday of one of my sons, and within six hours of being the anniversary of another. But though it passed as such sort of festivals generally do, yet it was to me followed by very little pleasure. An occasion into which no sinister feeling might have been supposed to enter;—had there been any lurking sentiment of that kind, prudence would have repressed the expression. But the proceedings were misrepresented, and it shews that in Upper Canada my lines had not fallen in pleasant places.

The first toast after dinner was of course the King, the next, the rest of the Royal Family. The army and navy were certainly intentionally omitted, because the list of public toasts was long enough without them, but in their stead were the governor-in-chief of the provinces, and the lieutenantgovernor of Upper Canada. In giving the former I took occasion to mention that I had a particular pleasure in proposing it, as I regarded myself personally indebted to the Earl of Dalhousie. The next was Sir Peregrine Maitland, which I prefaced with strong assurances of the alacrity with which my every wish had been met by his Excellency; no more than truth; and it was in consequence drunk with marked approbation. But will it be credited, that an occasion of mere festivity was converted into one that served to justify detraction? It was said that I had omitted to drink the health of Sir Peregrine, and that I had seized the opportunity to abuse the clergy corporation.—The matter taken by itself was trivial, and but for the assurance that it gave me of my being an object of malevolence, would have been disregarded. But one does not require to consult Tacitus, to know that there is no hatred so inextinguishable as that which follows unprovoked injuries.

What increased the excoriation of the heart I began to

suffer, at finding every thing I did so distorted by some secret enemies,—I say some secret enemies, for every-where I found friendliness from the general inhabitants,—was, that the Directors in London began now to take up the strain.

y,

r-

d:

he he

of

tle

ht

ng

he

nd

in

he

vy

lic

ere

nt-

caing

of

ħΙ

ich

ore

ap-

ere

ac-

Sir

the

ial,

ect

oes

no

ked

to

It had been clearly understood as an inducement to Government to sell the reserves to the Company, that the province was to be greatly benefited by its operations, and that it was not to be a mere land-jobbing concern. I therefore estimated the expenditure, one thing with another, equal to the price of the land, and I received a paper of calculations made by the gentleman who acted in my absence, by which he shewed himself of the same opinion. But without this consideration, there were circumstances in the state of the times by which the shares of all joint-stock companies were affected. Nevertheless though I was, to use a familiar figure, only building the house that was afterwards to produce a rental, it was said my expenditure had tended to lower the Company's stock; in short, the echo of the rumour that I had heard of the Directors' disapproval before any account of my proceedings could have reached London; and, to crown all, I was ordered to change the name from Guelph to Goderich. In reply, I endeavoured to justify what had been done, and as the name could not be altered. I called another town, founded about this time at Lake Huron, by the name of his Lordship.

But instead of giving any satisfaction, my letters of justification drew a more decisive condemnation of the name of Guelph. The manner in which the second disapproval was couched set me a-thinking and laying different things together, I drew the conclusion that there was somewhere a disposition to effect my recall. That I knew could be done without assigning any reason, but it was a step that required a pretext to take, and therefore I determined to make a stand.

Strictly according to rule and law, I wrote back that the name of the place was not a thing that I cared two straws about, but as it had been the scene of legal transactions, it was necessary to get an act of the provincial parliament be-

fore the change could be made, and that therefore if the Court would send me the preamble for a bill, I would loose no time in applying for it. I heard however nothing more on the subject, and thus a most contemptible controversy ended; but I cannot yet imagine how a number of grave and most intelligent merchants ever troubled their heads about such a matter. To me,

By any other name would smell as sweet."

se no re on ided; most

the

EPOCH SEVENTH.

CHAPTER I.

Reflections. Troubles. Colonelcy of Militia. Fancy Ball.

Private notice of a coming reprimand. Interview with

Sir Percgrine Maitland. Send in my resignation. The

colonelcy suspended.

AGREEABLY to the division of this work the festival at Guelph becomes epochal, by the incidents which succeeded. All was thriving beyond hope around me, every bud, to use an old homely expression, "biggent" with prosperity; but troubles began to develope themselves, the night-shade and the appletree came into blossom together.

Such seriousness may excite a smile; the transactions will be, however, memorable in the history of what must be a great country, and neither open enmity, nor the covert machinations of personal malice, nor the ingenuity of sordid self-interest, can hereafter prevent my humble name from being associated with the legends of undertakings at least as worthy of commemoration as the bloody traditions of heroic lands. To lessen the evils of one region by promoting the good of another, was the endeavour of my ambition, and the consciousness of this high aim is not impaired by withdrawing me from witnessing the fruit.

Soon after my return from Guelph, I was informed, by one of the Directors himself, that Mr. Horton had begged him to advise me to be more circumspect towards the officers of government. An admonition of this kind became a topic of

Vol. II. H

thought, and I soon arrived at the conclusion, that it could not be in consequence of my letter to him with the correspondence at my arrival with Sir Peregrine Maitland. Too much time had elapsed to draw from Mr. Horton such a recommendation, and the matter of the La Guayrian emigrants seemed to give no warranty for what he said. I felt, however, much obliged to him. Yet I could not conceal from myself that he was influenced by some cause unknown to me; for I could not imagine that there was anything in my letter to Major Hillier, with the application for the grant of lands at Burlington Bay, so alertly conceded, that could be perverted to other than an expression of my denial of the charges brought against me. But nevertheless, had I not written for my family when I received this letter, I would have postponed my intention, so much did any expressions as it were, affect me.

Except the impression of this circumstance there had been a gradual softening in many things towards me, and I began to imagine Sir Peregrine Maitland was now persuaded that my political principles were not such as he had been led to believe.

What contributed to make me think so was a visit which I one day received from Colonel Coffin, the head of the militia department, who mentioned, that his Excellency thought of appointing me to the command of a regiment, and that I had better turn over io my mind which of the gentlemen in the Company's employment should be officers. This information was unequivocally acceptable, and, accordingly, I resolved to change my recluseness into something more cordial towards the general inhabitants of York. I therefore directed one of the clerks, to whom I thought the task might be agreeable, to make arrangements for giving a general Fancy Ball to all my acquaintance, and the principal inhabitants. I could not be troubled with the details myself, but exhorted him to make the invitations as numerous as possible.

A short time before this project, Judge Willis, with his lady and mother, had arrived in the province, and as the old

not

nd-

hch

m-

nts

ev-

nyne:

lter

at

ted

ges for

ned

me.

en a

ran

that d to

:h I

itia

t of had

the

tion

l to

rds

e of

, to

my

be

ike

his

old

lady agreed to superintend the entertainment, I was sure it would be well done. In the very midst of the preparations, however, I received a private letter from London, informing me that I was to be reprimanded by the Directors next packet for having insulted the Governor, and that Mr. Huskisson, then Saratary of State, had communicated the complaint of Sir Peregrine Maitland by Mr. Stanley to the Court of Directors.

Utterly astonished at such intelligence, I waited on Sir Peregrine Maitland, and relating to him the information I had received, requested to know when and where I had ever, by word or deed, behaved unbecomingly towards him.

He seemed guarded during the interview, said that he had not been particularly severe in his representations, and denied that he had ever complained of any insult, but acknowledged that he had written home respecting me, on account of the private letter addressed to Major Hillier, with the application for the land at Burlington Bay.

The decided manner in which he repelled the idea of insult, convinced me that there was some exaggeration in my correspondent's letter, and in consequence, I said that until the letters from the Court were received, I would suspend my decision.

In this interview I was convinced, from the manner of Sir Peregrine Maitland, and the time which had elapsed from the date of the transaction, that he was surprised at the effect of his representation. I may be wrong in supposing this, but he spoke less seriously of the whole matter than I was led to expect.

In the course of a few days after I received my despatches, with copies of the correspondence with the Colonial Office, and it molested me to observe that the Directors had at once assumed me guilty, and precluded me from answering the charge. In this I deemed there was great injustice, and also that the construction put upon my letter to Major Hillier was equally unwarrantable and erroneous.

After a good deal of consideration and tingling at every pore with the remembrance of what I had received before I had been half an hour in the province, I sent in my resignation to the Directors; enclosing it to Mr. Bosanquet, the chairman. My circumstances required me to be guarded in what I did, and therefore, in sending the resignation, I left it to him to present it to the board or not. Had I not at this time reason to believe that my family were on the passage to America, I would not have troubled Ar. Bosanquet; but the step was not imprudent.

He knew not, however, how I had been tormented; for although I communicated my correspondence with the governor to Mr. Horton, in consequence of Sir Peregrine Maitland interdicting all defence and explanation, I had yet not regarded the business deserving of any representation to the Directors; indeed, except to Mr. John Hullett, I never took any notice of it in writing, and only to hin, as far as I now recollect, spoke of it incidentally in a light manner, believing that if there were any feeling on the part of the governor concerning the charges brought against me, it would soon subside.

The ball took place at the time flxed, and some two or three days after, meeting Colonel Coffin in the street, I somewhat quizzically inquired what had become of my commission. He replied, that Sir Peregrine had desired him to keep it back, but was evidently ignorant of the cause. Thus ended what would have been accepted as a token of having been vindicated from base assertions.

It is proper to add, that I was none surprised at the answer of Colonel Coffin, for it was more than could be expected from hum in nature to think Sir Peregrine Maitland would have then given me the appointment; to have done so, might have made him believe that I would receive the colonelcy as a sop to pacify me after the reprimand, and perhaps it might have had that undignified effect, but I knew of his excellency's intention to appoint me to the regiment before. One thing, however, I have always thought, though I have not taken the

trouble to inquire into the fact, that Mr. Horton, in privately requesting me to be advised to be more circumspect towards the king's officers, had received Sir Peregrine Maitland's complaint, but did not think, with Lord Bathurst, that it was worth while to make any ado about it. If right in this conjecture, I owe him a favour that requires some acknowledgment, and I think that Lord Bathurst, in not following out a complaint arising from a trival misconception, showed quite as much practical wisdom as the theoretical gentleman by whom he was succeeded. At all events I could frame no apology for the course which the Directors pursued. It was quite proper, when such a matter was considered important by a secretary of state, for them to take it up seriously; but justice required that the defence should have been heard before the punishment was inflicted.

H 2*

om ive ive sop

ver

ore

had

to

an.

lid.

to

son a, I

vas

for

er-

and

ded

rs;

tice ect, t if

rce hat He

ick, hat cat-

ive

ng, the

CHAPTER II.

Perplexities. Extend my knowledge of the Americans. A farce. Arrival of my family. Inquiries. Removal to Guelph Cardinal Weld. Rumours of the Company breaking up. Arrival of the Accountant.

FORTUNATELY these transactions took place far in the year when it was not necessary to commence any new undertaking, by which I was saved the disagreeable obligation to speak of my resignation. Nothing of it was known in the province,—even in the office. Soon after, I received accounts from home that my family had delayed their departure from England until the spring: I had, however, no time to prevent them from coming, but though, apparently, there was nothing to lead the public to think that the operations of the Company were really suspended, I suffered some vexation in contriving expedients to conceal my intention. Among others, I went somewhat earlier than was necessary to New York to meet my wife and the children, and employed the time there in making myself acquainted with the environs, and the manners and customs of the Americans.

By way of filling up the time, and with reference to some controversy concerning me in the New York papers regarding the farce at Quebec, I wrote while in that city a little dramatic piece called "The Aunt in Virginia," which I have since converted into a tale that has been published in Blackwood.—After my departure, it was performed at the Park theatre for the benefit of Mr. Maywood.

I also went into Pennsylvania, and staid two or three days, experiencing the same sort of civilities which made New York agreeable; but met with no incident worth describing. The city of Philadelphia, however, much exceeded in its pub-

lic edifices my expectation. I ought however to mention what appeared to me very preposterous, namely, the architecture of the national bank. It was nearly a fac-simile in white marble, without the sculptures, of the Parthenon of Athens, but wanting in every respect the characteristics of an edifice for commercial purposes. It really seemed to me far worse than the design which the carpenter made for the tavern. In other respects some of the public buildings deserve commendation; but the grotesque pervades them all, and the display is more of opulence than of taste.

With my usual disposition to discover theoretical causes, I thought it not difficult to account for the general obvious lack of correct taste in the Americans. Their edifices considered as specimens of architecture were, abstracted from their use, extremely good, but they had as little appropriateness about them as Covent Garden Theatre or the India House, buildings which I regard as the most perfect examples of the burlesque extant in architecture. They have all the defects of which such preposterous fabricks are susceptible, and not any of that beauty in execution, which sometimes redeems the faults of design

From Philadelphia, I returned to New York. Soon after, my family arrived, and among despatches from the Court of Directors, I received a letter from Mr. Bosanquet informing me that after consulting some of my friends, he had withheld the resignation.

I shall always remember with gratitude the kind reception with which my family was welcomed at New York.—After staying there several days, we proceeded up the Hudson by a steamer to Albany, where I hired the exclusive use of the cabin of one of the passage boats on the canal, and went on towards Canada. In this trip, as my duties were renewed by the receipt of Mr. Bosanquet's letter, I was assiduous in my inquiries as we went along, respecting the American systems of settlement; and it afforded me indiscribable satisfaction to find mine was superior in simplicity.

A to ny

to the acar-

of ion iog ew

the ns,

me rdtle
in I
in

ys, ew I knew this, indeed, before, but I was not in a condition to make comparison sooner myself. For after I had organized the system of business for the Canada Company, and arranged the books requisite to be the index of operations that extended over a vast tract of country, I was enticed by the frank reception I had met with at Geneva in the Pulteney office, to invite a very able person, the chief clerk, to visit me, and to examine the system I had formed. This kindness, Mr. M'Nab, the gentleman alluded to, had fulfilled before my departure to New York, and expressed himself after examining every thing, in very gratifying terms. I was actuated in soliciting him to examine the books of my official routine, by a wish to leave behind, if my resignation were accepted, some proof that I had not neglected my duties, and had made the way smooth for a successor. I could not, however, request him to view the proceedings under Mr. Prior, at Guelph, because they were still in a crude unfinished state, so that it was only the business of the office that could be submitted to his scrutiny.

My family left the Erie canal at Lockport, and proceeded to the house at Burlington Bay. In the summer I removed to Guelph, being induced to repair for a residence, the receiving house, which Mr. Prior had creeted there for settlers, as it was better than such sort of buildings commonly are.

It was not my intention to make Guelph the permanent residence of the superintendent of the Company; though I did propose it to be the site of the principal office. On the contrary, I purchased the small cleared farm of "The Mountain," near to Burlington Bay, and began to collect materials for building in time a house there, which I intended to raise at my leisure. The situation was near the head of lake Ontario, about half way between Guelph and the capital, for I saw that, after the routine of the office was fully at work, it would not be important for the superintendent to be constantly present; the person on whom the charge of the office would devolve, should be sufficient to oversee the details there, and that it would be advantageous for the general superintendent

ke

the

the

lled

ep-

in-

to

Mr.

de-

ing

SO-

ine.

ted,

had

ver,

, at

ate.

be

d to

d to

ing'

3 it

esidid

conin."

for

my

rio,

saw

ould

atly

uld

and

ent

to be in a more accessible and central situation.—My reason for wishing the office to be at Guelph was, that as the expenditure of the different gentlemen in the office would be considerable, as well as that of persons coming on business, it would be beneficial to the place. The removal of my family to Guelph was, therefore, only a temporary measure; and arose from a circumstance which may be here explained.

I had some reason to hope that Mr. Weld of Lulworth castle (now cardinal Weld in Rome) would come to Upper Canada, and probably make it his residence; being desirous to allure him to Guelph, I had this in view in converting the receiving house into a habitation.

Having in some sort a kind of taste in architecture, it seemed to me that the house could be made into a comfortable scclesiastical abode, and accordingly, although it was only ten feet high in the ceiling, I employed my best skill in laying it The reader will please to recollect, that it was but a cottage of one story and formed of trunks of trees; as I have said, however, before, it was of its kind very beautifully constructed by Mr. Prior, externally. I only added a rustic portico to it of trees with the bark, but illustrative of the origin of the lonic order: it did not cost five pounds. The interior was planned for effect, and on entering was imposing, but the hall and two principal rooms were only twenty feet some inches square. It is not my intention, however, to describe this fabric, but merely to mention my chief object in the repair, after it had served its purpose, and to give some idea of its size, as its magnitude and style have been much misrepresented. It should be added, that, for myself, I in formed the directors that I would allow an adequate rent.— My intention was to pay about ten per cent. on the cost, including the original outlay for the building as a receiving house.

Before, however, removing from Burlington Bay to Guelph, I was obliged to go to Montreal* in consequence of some

^{*} It was not till after this excursion, that I was led to observe the waste of mechanical power in the rapids of the St. Lawrence, nor indeed till I saw

mistake, which the Company's agent at Glasgow, in Scotland, was alleged to have made with a party of emigrants. and in the course of this journey, I heard accidentally, that letters had been received from London to the effect, that it was the opinion there the company could not go on, and that the stock was falling. I was not a little surprised at hearing this, especially as every thing was prosperous with me beyond expectation. The gentleman who told me had not letters himself, but I had no reason to doubt the correctness of his information.

The news seemed unaccountable, but I soon heard it from several quarters, and could not suspect it was sinister; however, as always when impelled to conjecturing, I endeavored to ferret out the grounds of the report; and, accordingly, as if by accident, threw myself in the way of the gentleman who was said to have had the letters from London, and who propagated the story; but although I was so deeply interested, he preserved complete silence on the subject. Instead, however, of my anxieties being allayed by this strange tacituinity, they were more acutely excited, and I was persuaded the rumour was well founded. It would be wreng to say that I thought there was anything like a conspiracy at the bottom of the business, but it compelled me to entertain an opinion that there were persons, who, for ulterior purposes were interested in beating down the Company's stock to buy in, and that as a matter of course they were adverse to my

A Mr. George, of Quebec, communicated to me an idea of his, of placing wheels or gins in the rapids to tow up the vessels by winding up a rope, to which they should be fastened. The notion certainly is practicable, but I fear there is not yet traffic enough on the river to pay and maintain such es-

tablishments,

the mills of my friend, Mr. Clarke, above the Falls of Niagaea, was I led to think that the power in the rapids might be turned to advantageous account. Their beauty and their grandenr were felt by me as they are by all spectators, and at the first view no one thinks of any thing but their impetitious magnificence. Having seen them two or three times, this impassioned admiration subsides, and one then naturally thinks that they might be put to some useful purpose, at least such was the mental process with me, and I could not but imagine that there was something peculiar in seeking for water privileges among the brooks that run into the river, while so vast a produgality of power might be found in its stream, nor can I yet conceive how so enterprizing a people as the Americans have not thought of anchoring mills in the rapids, but what often hes most palpable before us, we least observe.

proceedings. If I did evil in giving heed to such shallow, and almost imaginary grounds, I cannot help it, but the suspicion was raised, and haunted me with importunity; nothing was visible, but the air was infected, and the odour was charnal.

nd,

 $\mathbf{n}\mathbf{d}$

et-

vas

nat ng

be-

et-

of

om

owred

as

who

who est-

ead,

tac-

uad-

g to

y at

a an

oses

buy

my

ed to sount.

ators, Ignifi-

a sub-

nseful

iteges ower

ing a apids,

lacing pe, to

but I

After finishing my business at Montreal, I returned home, where I found the accountant of the Company bad arrived from England, to act in that capacity and as eashier. incident, after having felt the inconveniency of insufficient clerks, was gratifying, but on looking at his instructions, they appeared strangely framed, and I was even from the first, not sausfied with them. Shortly after, his emoluments seemed to give a perplexing corroboration to the report I had heard in the lower province. They were, in my opinion, greatly beyond an adequate payment for the duties to be performed. And as the Directors complained of my apparent expenditure, I could not but conclude, that it was resolved to break up the Company, and that the excessive emoluments of the accountant were bait to allure him out of the way, and to enable him to meet the exigencies to which he might be exposed, when the machination should take effect.

I call it machination, because I think it was a transaction of that nature, but I confess it did not seem to me very heinous to buy the stock cheap if no sinister means were employed to lower the price, especially as the effects of the Company in promoting the prosperity of the province were, in my opinion, of primary importance. Provided they were to be continued, I did not care who were the stock-holders, but I could not think without wincing at the idea of being father to a wild and ruinous scheme, for such I saw would be the conclusion, if the subscribers were induced to refuse to pay up their shares.—They were by this time at a discount, but are now the highest priced vendible stock in the market; only seventeen pounds are paid, and the price with the pre mium is fifty-five per cent., and there has been no change in the system established by me.

CHAPTER III.

The accountant. Incivility of the Directors for favors granted. Opening of the road to Lake Huron. Sickness of the labourers. Quarrel with the accountant.— Final determination to return to England.

SOMETHING, in the manner of the accountant, led me to conclude erroneously, that he was a party concerned in the machination which the transactions of every day rendered more and more obvious. I knew that he was naturally of a bad temper, and that though possessed of some redeeming qualities, was so devoured by vanity as not to be able to conduct himself rationally in any trust that implied consequence; I need not, therefore, say that I did not make him the depository of the anxieties I had brought from the Lower Province. In fact, if I had been so inclined, his airs and arrogance would have soon made me repent the confidence. I shall therefore say no more of him here, but refer the reader to a document in the Appendix, written in answer to a tissue of falsehoods which he addressed to the shareholders when he returned, and in which I made no scruple of employing the sterling epithets which malignity or insanity merit.

Although my condition was none alleviated by the disastrous arrival of the accountant, I pursued my plans, for the benefit, as I thought, of the Company and for the advantage of the province, namely, by opening roads to render remote lands accessible and of course more valuable, and to give employment to poor emigrants. This was the drift of all I undertook, and in this consisted the pith and marrow of my out-of-door system.—

Every thing else was subordinate to these two objects, for

the Directors gave me no instructions as to taking produce in payments; they did not even think the grant of land at Burlington Beach worth acknowledgement, or even of giving thanks for a building lot at a new harbour, which a personal friend of mine had reserved for the Company. I make no other remark on this strange incivility, than by stating that to me it served to corroborate the rumour I had heard in my way to Montreal.

Of one thing at this time I do not hesitate to say that I was proud, and with good reason too:—I caused a road to be opened through the forest of the Huron tract, nearly a hundred miles in length, by which an overland communication was established, for the first time, between the two great lakes, Huron and Ontario. The scheme of this undertaking was, in my opinion, not ill contrived, and was carried into effect almost literally by Mr. Prior, though the manner in which the Directors now saw every thing, so fretted me, that I could not suppose there was any good, but only waste, in what he did.

All the woodmen that could be assembled from the settlers were directed to be employed, an explorer of the line to go at their head, then two surveyors with compasses, after them a band of blazers, or men to mark the trees in the line,—then went the woodmen with their hatchets to fell the trees, and the rear was brought up by waggons with provisions and other necessaries. In this order they proceeded simultaneously cutting their way through the forest, till they reached their spot of destination on the lonely shores of lake Huron where they turned back to clear off the fallen timber from the opening behind.

For this undertaking, which in its object and purpose was stupendous, I was only allowed three thousand pounds, a sum prodigiously inadequate, and it was in consequence imperfectly accomplished; but it set my wits to work, and I declared the men employed on it were only to be paid, part in

Vol II. I

avors Sicknt.

mache and mper, was mself need ory of

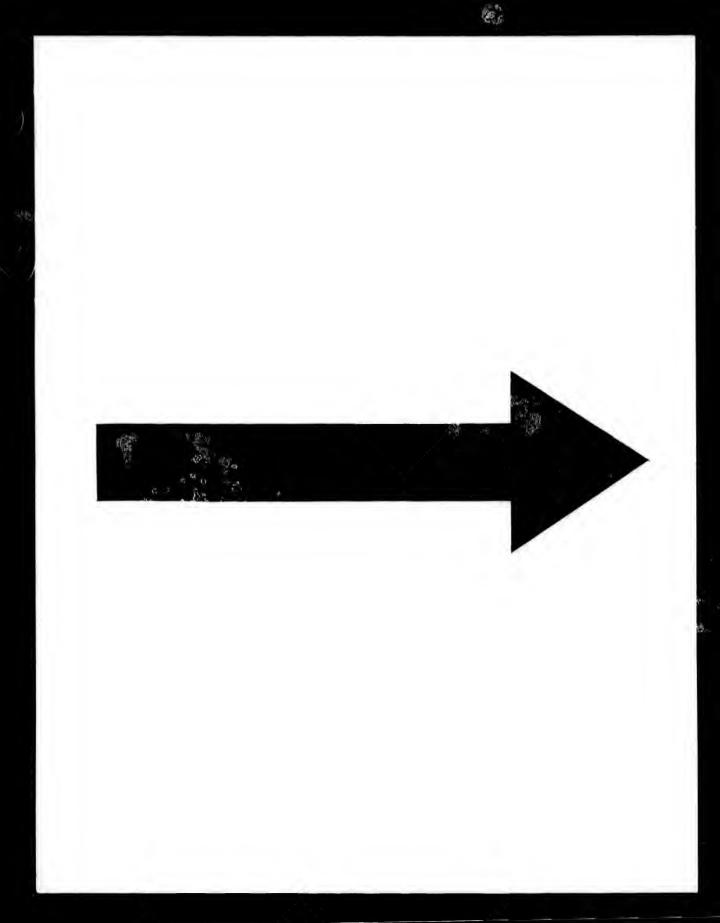
con-

e. In would efore ment hoods rned. erling

strous benge of mote give all I

s, for

f my



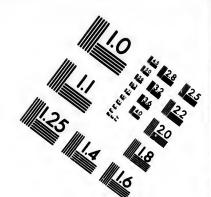
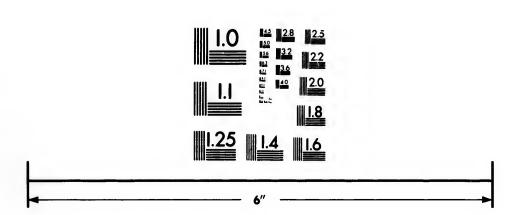


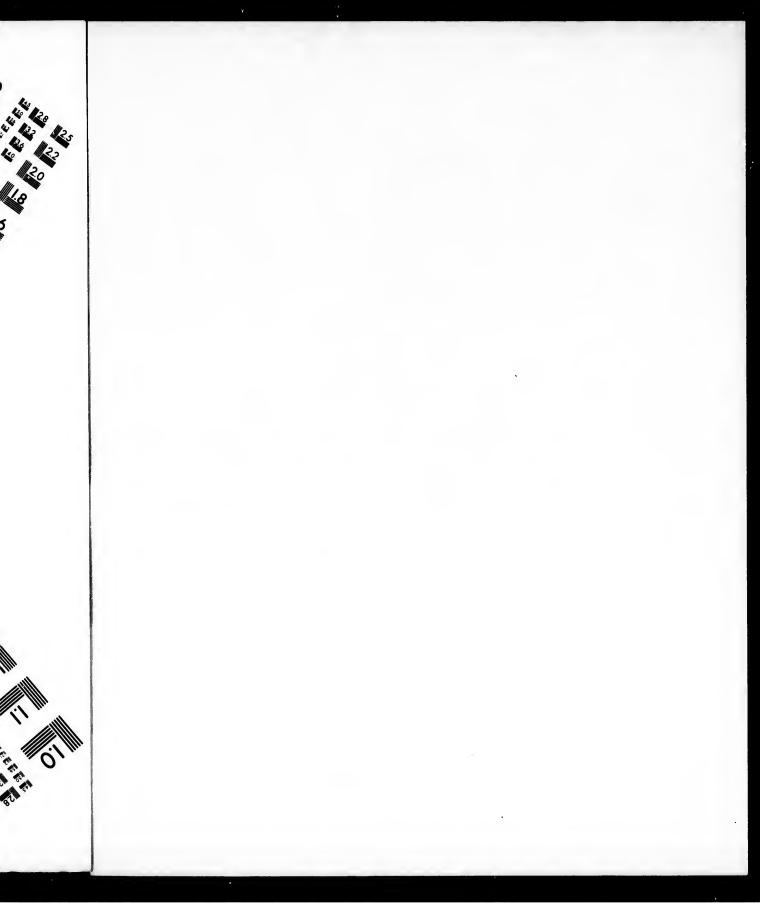
IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503

STATE OF THE STATE



money and part in land, at a certain price. Thus the undertaking was converted into a source of profit, for although the work cost nearly five thousand pounds, upwards of nineteen hundred were profit by the sale of the land.

But though the magnitude of this "Cæsarean operation" on the woods, was gratifying to the imagination, it yet occasioned some painful tugs to humanity. One morning upwards of forty of the men came in afflicted with the ague; they were of the colour of mummies, and by hardships frightfully emaciated. I had written to the Directors to let me hire a doctor for a year to the settlement, but no attention was paid to the solicitation. However the case by a little address was rendered not desperate; I ordered a surgeon to be engaged as a clerk, and made him a compensation for his skill.

When the season approached in which it was necessary to suspend the labours, I went to York, both to see what was doing in the office there, of which the accountant was in charge, and to be on the spot when the new governor, Sir John Colborne, who was daily expected, should arrive. It will be readily conceived that I had no particular anxiety to obtrude my good wishes on Sir Peregrine Maitland at his departure, but it will be believed by those who best know me, that I had very little feeling on the subject. In my trusts I had experienced the most alert attention, and as superintendent of the Canada Company I could have only gratitude to express, but I felt no personal obligation, on the contrary; and I did resent with fervour my unworthy treatment; some excuse might be made for Sir Peregrine Maitland, inasmuch as the calumnies which affected me did not originate with himself; but I thought, and think, that he showed an aptitude to entertain unfavorable impressions.

By this time the accountant had become an affliction, but I still thought he might be endured. I knew how much his situation was important to him, and also that he was aware that mine was essential to me. I therefore on more than one occasion beseeched him to sheath his manners, but an

incident occurred at this time that, to use a Scottish proverb, "put the head sheaf on the stuke," in English, " crowned all."

Remembering, as I could not but remember, how disagreeable I had been it seems to Sir Peregrine Maitland, I still thought that for his attentions to the objects of my trust, though they called for acknowledgement from the Superintendent of the Canada Company, John Galt was but little indebted to him, and therefore I resolved to make a marked distinction between them; accordingly I wrote a civil but true note as superintendent.

To this letter the accountant imagined he should have been a party, but I thought differently.

In the course of the day I received a notification from Sir Peregrine, intimating that if I would come early to the Government-house next morning, he would introduce me himself to the new lieutenant-governor.—This was more than I expected, and I received the invitation as an assurance that my political conduct had not been unsatisfactory.—I mentioned this invitation to the accountant, and begged him to be in order, as I would afterwards present him to Sir Johh Colborne, but at the communication he sullenly heard me.

Next day, when I returned from the Government-house, I requested him to dress to go with me to Sir John Colborne, but he broke out into a frantic passion, talked unmitigated nonsense, and said, I ought to have taken him "in my hand" when I went to Sir Peregrine. His manner was so ridiculous that I could not answer him gravely, but something like a threat of complaining to the directors, implying a sort of authorized surveillance over me, and as if he had something in his power, roused me to think, and as my situation by him, and other things, was rendered one of real suffering, I determined to return to England, and accordingly wrote, by the first packet, the following letter to the directors:

" Nelson, Nov. 9th, 1828.

" GENTLEMEN,

"I had recently the honor to communicate to the court my

tion"
t ocg upgue;
ships
to let

lerta-

h the

eteen

ntion e adto be skill.

was
is in
Sir
It
ty to
t his

me, sts I erinitude ary; some

inasinate l an

but I
his
ware
than
an

persuasion that the affairs of the Company could not be managed by two officers, in the way proposed by Mr. Smith, without great additional trouble and expense. It was also then mentioned, that I was no less persuaded inconvenience would arise from his holding an independent correspondence with the Directors. I understand he has since sent home the whole or portions of the result of his inquiries, which I have never seen; and I have to add, that, except his first letter, I have not seen any of his communications to the Court.

"If he has private instructions to act in this manner, it ought to have been communicated to me that he had private instructions, and then I should have been able to decide what was the becoming course to take; and if he has not private instructions, I am placed under the painful necessity of saying of an old friend, that I can no longer justify to myself the endurance of the tone and authority he has assumed.

"This, with the manifest and growing necessity of averting an increase of misconceptions, as well as to offer and obtain the multifarious explanations which seem to be requisite for the right and systematic management of the Company's interest, has induced me to determine on returning home, in order that a proper understanding may be established, and instructions issued, by which the management may be harmoniously'conducted. It will not, I fear, be practicable to be with the Court before the general meeting in December, but it may be adjourned.

"I have the honour, &c.

"JOHN GALT."

"To the Governor, Deputy-Governor and Directors of the Canada Company."

In sending this letter to the post office, my servant told me, when he came back, that the accountant had crossed Lake Ontario in the morning, and I was soon informed that he had gone to New York—which left me no doubt he was off for England. My departure was in consequence rendered im-

withthen would with e the have etter,

man-

er, it vivate what vivate viving e en-

d obuisite 's inin orid inrmowith

may

told Lake had I for impossible, without a scandalous abandonment of duty.—However, I resolved to prepare for going home, and immediately began to make arrangements for that purpose. The season of the year was convenient, all the works were suspended, and I had only to get the accounts made up, which were found to have been left in much confusion, worse than before the arrival of the accountant, an effect of his precipitate flight.

CHAPTER IV.

New rumours of the Company breaking up. Strange conduct of the directors. Payment due to Government.—
No money. Resolution. Effects. Mr. Fellows' report.
The directors of the Canada Company allow a bill for cash received to be protested.

AFTER the departure of the accountant for England, I received from different quarters many tokens of assurance that the Company would soon be broke up; in consequence my resolution to return home seemed the more necessary. But an event soon after took place, which drove me to my wit's end.

The Directors of the Company, without apprising me, ordered the bank of York not to answer my drafts; what they meant by this disgraceful and embarrassing order they knew best themselves, but I received the intimation as another proof that the Company was near its dissolution, and something like a reason to apprehend that the misfortune was to be represented as originating with me. I do not insinuate that it was so intended, but the Directors ought to have seen that it would have this effect.

Mortifying as this measure undoubtedly was, it failed of its effect, for I was so exasperated, that I resolved, as I was not going home, to disregard any instructions coming from the Court, and to attend only to what I thought was for the good of the proprietary. I did not need to wait long for an opportunity, to act on this decision.

In the month of December, there was a payment of about eight thousand pounds, due to the colonial government, for which I was not provided with literally one penny, and I augured, from the inconsistencies of the Court, that I would not

be supplied. In this dilemma, I sent Dr. Dunlop to Montreal, to see if he could obtain the money from the agents of the Company, or from the correspondents of such Directors as were connected with Canada. I anticipated no success in this alternative, and was not mistaken; none of them would advance a shilling.

In this crisis, I recollected that there were ten thousand pounds of government debentures, deposited in the bank by myself, which, by some oversight, the Directors seem to have forgotten. I accordingly waited on the Receiver-general, told him how I was situated, and offered, if he would endorse my bills on the Company, for the payment to government, to give him security in the debentures. A transaction of this kind naturally surprised him, but with the friendliness I had ever experienced from him, he communicated, as I have reason to believe, my proposal and embarrassment to Sir John Colborne, the lieutenant-governor. With that alacrity to prevent the blight which would fall on an institution, beneficial to the province, if the payment was not made, Sir John assented to my proposal. The bill was accordingly drawn, the honour of the Company saved, and the public officers sheltered from the inconveniences that might have attended the sudden suspension of their salaries, the means of paying which were provided for in the payment.

I saw, by the rumours reaching me from all quarters, that this step would not be indulgently considered by the Court of Directors, but I as plainly perceived that I had essentially served the Company, and was satisfied with my consciousness of having done right as a sufficient reward. I do not know if ever the Court of Directors condescended to mention the affair out of their own body, but what would have been the result had the Company failed in its payment, on which the government depended?

Thoroughly persuaded now that I was destined to be a victim, I determined not to be knocked on the head without a struggle, and in consequence, having gathered from the account-

e conent. eport. ll for

eceivat the resodut an 's end.

knew proof ething be rethat it

of its as not m the good oppor-

about t, for I auld not ant, as well as from manifold reports, that my proceedings were viewed with no favourable eye, I sent to the Pulteney office, at Geneva, to request a gentleman, who is now principal agent for the property, to come and inspect my operations; I was very earnest that he should do so, and the cause is sufficiently obvious. As soon as possible he obeyed my anxious request, and after a very minute scrutiny gave me the following report, which I transmitted to the Court of Directors.

It pleased them, however, to pay no attention to the document, although it proceeded from one of the best qualified gentlemen in all the United States, and whose trust was, at least in these days, ten times the value of theirs.

Guelph, Upper Canada, Feb. 4, 1829.

"GENTLEMEN,

- "At the request of John Galt. Esq., superintendent of the concerns of the Canada Company, I have visited this place, viewed the improvements in the village, and examined the roads contiguous to it, made under his orders.
- "Considering the short period of time that has elapsed since the village was founded, and that it is only about eighteen months since it was an entire forest, the number of buildings, and the population, are proofs of uncommon industry and enterprise.
- "I have perused with attention a report made to Mr. Galt by Mr. Charles Prior, of the different improvements made by him on the lands of the Company, under the direction of Mr. Galt, and I have the pleasure of expressing to you my most decided opinion, that all the proceedings of Mr. Galt and Mr. Prior have been exceedingly judicious; that the improvements have been indispensable to the sale and settlement of the Company's lands, and that the outlays for mechanics' and labourers' wages are as moderate, as is usual in a new and unsettled country; for it is impossible, in such a country to get good hands without the allowance of high wages, as an

inducement to submit to the inconveniences, incident to labouring in the wilderness, remote from settlements, where many privations must be endured, and the health greatly exposed. Mechanics' and labourers' wages are uniformly higher than they are, after a more general improvement of the country.

"I am of opinion that the sales, made thus, far have been at good prices, and the cash payments larger than is usually received from the first settlers in a new tract of land.

"I have examined the books in which sales are entered, and also the forms of certificates and contracts given to purchasers, and the letters addressed to applicants for land: the certificates, contracts, and letters are in very suitable form, and the books are well adapted to exhibit correct and accurate views of the affairs of the Company.

"It has been found by experience that it is necessary, to the prosperous and successful management of large estates of new land, that the agent or superintendent should be invested with very ample discretionary powers; and it is generally impracticable to promote, in the best manner, the interests of such a concern, under restrictions imposed by principals residing in foreign countries, not acquainted with the wants and necessities of a new country, and unable to appreciate the difficulties encountered by the poor people, who are uniformly the first settlers of such a country. In the management of the Pulteney estates in the state of New York, it was found impracticable to execute the instructions of Sir William Pulteney, and he subsequently permitted his agent to exercise as full a discretion in the management of his property as if he had been the proprietor of it. The present resident agent of the Holland Land Company, refused to accept his appointment until he was invested with full discretionary powers, for the management of the affairs of the Company.

"I understand from Mr. Galt, that his sales are on a credit of five years, one fifth of the purchase money being paid down.

ous

age

ev

pal

; [

cuied , at

the ice, the

nce een igs, and

ade
of
my
alt
iment
ics'

nd to an The credit of sales of the Pulteney estates is from seven to ten years; and, I am informed, the latter period is the usual credit granted on sales of the crown lands in Canada by the King's commissioner. By extending the credit from five to ten years, and, in particular cases by accepting small sums as first payments, the sales may be considerably increased, much to the advantage of the Company.

"The execution of contracts and other writings in triplicate, to the end that one of the copies may be transmitted to the Company in London, will, in my judgment, be attended with much labour and expense, without any adequate advantage. The transmission of an annual return,—to exhibit the sales of land, the cash collections and expenditure, the lands remaining unsold, the amount of debt due to the Company on sales, and other necessary particulars, would,-by being thrown into a condensed form, furnish all the information necessary to a proper understanding of the operations of the concern. If the Company should require the transmission to England of original vouchers, it would be necessary to take them in duplicate, a measure which will prove to be very troublesome in so large a business; and I should recommend the verifications of the accounts by oath, in preference to the transmission of vouchers.—The trustees of the Johnstone estate at one time required triplicate contracts to be sent them; but the arrangement proved to be so inconvenient, that they have long since abandoned the requisition, and accepted returns similar to those above mentioned.

"I would recommend, as an improvement of the form of licence granted to a purchaser to take possession of a lot of land on making the first payment, the addition of a clause binding him to dispense with notice to quit, in case it should become necessary, by failure of payment or other cause, to remove him from the land by legal process.

"I think the present office of the Company, in the village of Guelph, is quite insufficient for the convenient and proper execution of so extensive a concern, and that it will be necessary

to ten usual by the ive to ms as much

triplied to
ended
dvanit the
lands
ipany
being
n neif the

very nend e to stone sent ient, and

on to

take

n of ot of ause ould

e of ex+ sary that a larger and more convenient building should be erected. The present occupancy of several different buildings for offices is extremely inconvenient, as it is attended with much loss of time in going from one office to another.

"Upon the whole, I beg leave] most respectfully to state to the Company, my decided opinion that Mr. Galt's agency has been conducted with sound judgment, a proper regard to economy and the interests of the Company; that his proceedings have promoted their best interests: and, I believe, the Company cannot more effectually promote their own views, than by delegating to him the most ample discretionary powers.

"I am, Gentlemen, your humble Servant

(Signed) "JOSEPH FELLOWS

"Sub-agent to the Pulteney and Johnstone Estates, residing at Geneva, in the county of Ontario, and state of New York.

"To the Governor and Deputy-Governor of the Canada Company."

The report of Mr. Fellows would, I thought, be conclusive as to the tendency of my transactions, and the accounts satisfactorily demonstrate that there was no extravagance in my undertakings—in a word, that the report and the accounts would exonerate me from the sinister charge of prodigality, which had been fabricated against me.

Connected with the inspection of Mr. Fellows, there was an incident for which I have no epithet of resentment adequate to express the feelings which arise, whenever I think of it.

In coming to Guelph, Mr. Fellows, passed through part of the Pulteney lands, and made a collection of installments, that amounted to about one hundred pounds. As the money was in notes of different denominations of dollars, the parcel was bulky, and he gave it to me for a bill on London, to account of a remittance he had to make. The bill was duly received by the receiver of the Pulteney monies, a banker, but on presenting it for acceptance at the Canada house, the Directors allowed it to be protested; afterwards, thinking better of their rashness, they paid it for the honour of the drawer.

At this period I had left a thousand pounds per annum of my salary in the hands of the Company, so that had I drawn upon them they were amply provided for any possible loss; but I mention this transaction to shew the spirit that had been somehow fomented against me; the result has sufficiently shown that the treatment—the degradation—was unmerited. My successors have not found they could improve my plans, but they are gathering the freightage of the vessel which I had planned and had the laborious task of the building and launching, by which my health has been vitally injured, and my mind filled with a rancour that has embittered my life.—But public bodies are without hearts, and the true way of earning disappointment, is by an ardent endeavour to please. I say this with the austerity of truth, warranted by experience.

out on Firectter of

um of
drawn
loss;
l been
ciently
erited.
plans,
hich I
g and
ed, and
life.—
way of

please.

rience.

CHAPTER V.

Acquisitions of knowledge. Ancient fortifications. Digging a well in a rock. A funereal urn. Natural phenomena. A vast tree.

While the necessary preparations for my departure were in process, that the affairs of the company might not be left in disorder, it being then winter, I had myself comparatively little to do, but as I could not be idle, and had but slight inclination for literature, I involuntarily began to reckon up what items of knowledge had been added to my stock, during my residence in America.

In experience I had certainly gained something, something too of acquaintance with that idiomatic difference, which distinguishes the English race of the new world, from their kindred in the old; but altogether the acquirements were very slender indeed. Reports of marvels I had heard, but they were as echoes of sounds afar off. I had also myself seen monuments of unknown things, and a phase of nature that might have been before imagined, but in the contemplation was entirely new.

The country was entirely unexamined, and contained many things to rouse curiosity and awaken conjecture.

I had frequently heard of the remains of earthen fortifications, on which trees of majestic growth demonstrated, that they were older than the discovery of America; and some remains, on my cleared farm of The Mountain, never ceased on every visit to awaken wonder. Part of it was situated on a lofty table land, which descended in abrupt precipices and steep declivities to the lower country. Along the edge of the

Vol. II. K

heights extended a mound of considerable mass, as if in the olden time a battery or wall of earth had been erected there. This relic of an inclosure suddenly turned into the country and showed that the place had been formerly surrounded. But, save this grave-mound of antiquity, little else could be discovered. There was, however, in one place a considerable abrasion, as it may be called, of the investing heap, which required no very great stretch of fancy, to imagine had been produced by the rush of a flood.

Whether the mound was artificial, or one of those freaks of regularity, which unorganized nature sometimes manifests, greater ingenuity than mine is requisite to determine; but I have never ceased to think that it exhibited the mouldering relics of the warlike expedients of ancient days. It was plain that a mound on the edge of a lofty upland was not likely to have been accidental, and the sweeping away of the earth was consistent with sacred history.

In speaking one day to Mr. Ridout, the surveyor-general, of this obscure matter for conjecture, and of old square excavations on Burlington Beach, he mentioned to me that he had once seen, in the woods, a very entire ancient fortification of considerable extent, and gave me a direction by which I might ride some day to see it. I forget now its exact situation, but it was within a short distance of the road, which leads from York to Lake Simcoe.

While residing at Burlington Bay, I employed an emigrant to dig a well on my farm, preparatory to other prospective operations. It was seemingly a very absurd proceeding, to look for water on the top of a limestone rock, for where I had fixed on building was a mass of that kind, but the project was not quite irrational, nor undertaken without consideration.

My custom, in the summer evenings, was to prowl alone in the forest. In going along the bottom of the precipices alluded to, I noticed several springs of great affluence, welling from fissures in the rock, and concluded that there were veins in the there. puntry . But, liscove abraquired oduced

freaks
nifests,
but I
dering
s plain
likely
e carth

eneral,
ire exthat he
fication
which I
situawhich

nigrant pective ling, to where I project eration.

lone in salludwelling e veins and issues of water in the strata, coming from some fountain head. In consequence I sent for an old German, as famous in those parts for the discovery of ores and springs as Douterswivel himself, and employed him to perambulate with the divining rod the table land, on which in time I intended to build, in order to ascertain where the well should be excavated. I had no great faith in the operation, but it was one of those things which a person, when he has it in his power should test.

I became a little interested, very little at first, in the man's proceedings, but ultimately made him prepare a rod, and took a part in the mystery myself. My own experiment, however, owing no doubt to its being a first attempt, was unsuccessful, but after some time he pitched on a spot for the well, and this was on the top of the artificial mound before described. I determined, however, in spite of reason, to give the German fair play, and accordingly, in disregard of remonstrance, ordered the well to be excavated there.

After digging through the earthen mass, which was six or seven feet deep, the digger came to the rock, which, with much blasting and perseverance, was penetrated to the depth of between thirty and forty feet, without any symptom of water, at last he reached a porous stratum, in which were the remains of tropical fishes petrified, and the limestone apparently perforated thickly with worms. I have some specimens of this curious subterranean wonder in my possession, but all was yet as dry as hay.

The well-digger then had recourse to his iron rod, and soon reached with it a subterranean stream of water, which, by rising through the aperture, half filled the well. I offer no comment on this fact, but the well is there, and obtains its water from the perforated rock.

When I removed to Guelph, a labourer on a mill-dam, which a gentleman was constructing, came to a very neatly excavated triangular niche in the rock, and striking his pickaxe

into the earth, with which it was filled, smashed an ancient funereal urn into fragments, several of which were brought to me, and resembled, but were of rather better pottery, a number of vases I had dug up in the days of my youth at Athens, some of which I sent to my friend, Principal Baird of Edinburgh, to be placed in the museum of the University.

These items of art were not, however curious, so interesting to me, as the natural phenomena.

It is an established doctrine in America, that the timber indicates the quality of the soil, no one presumes to doubt the fact, and yet it is not easy to find an older growth of natural timber than that existing in the forest. I do not propose to offer a contradiction to that which is considered so perfectly established, but my own observations afford some warrantry to question its accuracy, for I have seen in several places that when the timber has been long removed from the land, new trees begin to appear not of the same kind as their predecessors. On the farm of The Mountain this was remarkably the case. On a spot where there had been formerly pines and tamaricks, which indicate a poor soil, walnuts and other trees, which are considered as the signs of the richest, began to appear, from which I have ventured to infer that nature herself delights in a rotation of crops, if such a term may be applied to timber.*

This idea of a succession of trees is worthy of examination, to myself it was the parent of many fancies, and I began to endeavour to find out some mode of judging, by the state of the forest, of its antiquity. I was not, however, in this research very successful, but another fact gave some colouring to my theory. On the road to Guelph, a short distance from Galt, there is an uncleared portion of the primeval forest, on the

^{*} At Chambly, in Lower Canada, in the time of the war, a large space had been cleared for the troops, but on the declaration of peace the land was left fallow. In a few years the greater part was completely overgrown with pines, while in the neighbouring forests, which had been left untouched, there were only maple, beech, &c ,with not above one or two pines. Be it remarked, the land around is the richest alluvial soil in Lower Canada, and these trees, it is said, indicate only the most sterile soil.

icient
ght to
numthens,
Edin-

erest-

imber doubt natuose to fectly try to s that , new leceskably pines other began ature av be

ation, gan to of the search to my Galt, on the

ace had nas left n pines, se were ed, the es, it is edge of the township of Beverly, where, in those days, a small tavern, convenient to rest the horses of travellers, was situated. One day, when I stopped at this house, while my horse was taking his corn, I strayed into the woods, not many hundred yards, and came to a tree, the most stupendous I had ever seen.

At the first glance the trunk reminded me of the London monument, an effect of the amaze which the greatness of its dimensions produced. I measured its girth, however, at the height of a man from the ground, and it was thirty-three feet above which the trunk rose, without a branch, to the height of at least eighty feet, crowned with vast branches. This was an oak, probably, the greatest known, and it lifted its head far above the rest of the forest. The trees around, myrmidons of inferior growth, were large, massy, and vigorous, but possessed none of the patriarchal antiquity with which that magnificent "monarch of the woods" was invested. I think, therefore, that I was not wrong in imagining it the scion of a forest that had passed away, the ancestral predecessor of the present woods.

Had I been convinced that it was perfectly sound, I would have taken measures for cutting it down, and sending home planks of it to Windsor castle. The fate that awaited it, would have justified the profanation. The doubt of its soundness, however, and the difficulty of finding tools large enough to do it justice, procrastinated the period of its doom. I recommended the landlord of the tavern to direct his guests, from time to time, to inspect this Goliath of oaks.

CHAPTER VI.

New articles of export. Operations. Intentions. A discovery.

From the moment that it seemed probable I might be sent to Canada, all the theories, formed in my meditations respecting colonies, began to germinate. The most obvious, for the ultimate advantage of a country, seemed to me the introduction of new articles of produce, which in time might become added to the exports. Accordingly, I had spoken often to some of the Directors on the propriety of the Company, among other means of benefiting the province, instituting an experimental farm. But finding my suggestion going in at the one ear and come out at the other, I resolved to do something in the small way myself.

I have already mentioned my early endeavour to promote the cultivation of hemp in the province. Subsequently, having petitions to present to the Board of Trade from the seigniors and landlords of Lower Canada, when the corn bill was in agitation, and being unsuccessful in obtaining their prayer, I began to feel an interest in the agriculture of the country.* Thus it came to pass, that in my correspondence respecting the claims for the war losses, I was informed of the success

^{*} A very striking circumstance occurred respecting these positions. The present Earl of Repon, then at the Board of Trade, did all, as I conceived it, in a minister's power, to promote the object of the petitions; but my city friends were not satisfied, and insisted that the business should be taken up as a cabinet question. It was agreed, accordingly, that a deputation of the matchants should be received by Lord Londonderry and himself at the Foreign Office. At the interview, the merchants had certainly the best of the argument, which, after a very patient hearing, induced Lord Londonderry to say, "Gentlement, come again next year, when (ulluding to the government) we shad be note in our senses." In the course of a tew days subsequent, his Lordship scaled his own doom, and our chairman lamentably consumated a smilar fate.

which had attended the introduction of tobacco into the province, and was directed, by one of my correspondents, to ascertain privately if any abatement of the duty on Canadian tobacco might be obtained, as it was an intention, in the next session of the Provincial Parliament, to make a public application to the British government on the subject. On receiving this intimation it occurred to me, that tobacco being an agricultural article, which did not interfere with the corn prejudices of the De Coverleys of England, the abatement of the duty was a legitimate object of pursuit.

Having ascertained that no representation had then been received from Canada, I addressed a memorial to the Lords of the Treasury, to which early attention was paid, and the Chancellor of the Exchequer himself, in due time, personally informed me, that an abatement of duty would be granted upon my petition, and referred me to the Board of Trade. This boon to the province was gratifying, but, before going to the Board of Trade, I inquired at the Colonial Office if any news from Upper Canada had been received, and heard that a representation had come from the legislature, recommending an abatement of the duty on tobacco, to the amount of three pence halfpenny per pound.

This intelligence disconcerted me, for never imagining that "the Wrongheads" of Upper Canada would specify any abatement, I had anticipated from the success of my application a far more considerable diminution, but the government could concede no more than was solicited, and accordingly the recommendation of the House of Assembly, for threepence halfpenny per pound, was immediately granted, and all my fine scheme for stirring up the trade at home to obtain a proper amount of reduction, was blown into the air; nor can I imagine yet, how the colonial legislature thought of prescribing the amount of the abatement, but strange things do sometimes happen in public affairs, from subjects as well as statesmen. At this moment the West Indians are talking of the vast

A dis-

ent to ecting e ultition of added one of other nental ar and in the

omote
r, havseignl was
rayer,
ntry.*
ecting
access

The ived it, my city aken up of the Foreign e argu to say, nt) we ent, his nated a

revenue, which their trade yields to the state, forgetting altogether that the consumer indemnifies them for the advances that are made, on account of the sugar duties.

Seeing, by my endeavours to acquire a knowledge of the resources of the province, for the purposes already mentioned, that a wide field lay open to me for the introduction of new articles, when I arrived in the country I set myself in the intervals of business to attend to the pursuit, and in consequence brought vines from a nursery-man in New York, and planted a small vineyard, which, though once flourishing, has of course gone to wreck. I recollected also, that, in the year 1759, cotton had been cultivated with success at Detroit, and resolving to try what might be done with it further east, sowed a cotton field on the Mountain. Having likewise, by a variety of experiments, ascertained that the maple sugar could be made as beautiful, and refined as purely as the Muscovado of the West Indies, I directed an avenue of young maples to be planted, leading towards the spot fixed upon for my house to be in time raised; but this too is doubtless an abortion. I had also another scheme, in which nothing was done. I mention it, however, here, that some one may hereafter profit by the hint.

Among many curious plants and shrubs, and trees, which were to be met with in the woods, the mulberry was found, and it instantly occurred to me, that the introduction of the cultivation of silk might become an object of consideration, although the severity of the climate, in winter, seemed to present an insurmountable obstacle. I called to mind, however, the devices of the two friars, who brought the worm first from China into Greece, and persuaded myself, that if the tree on which it ted was indigenous, the means might be found to nourish the worms and protect the cacoons. I say nothing of dreams about the cultivation of madder and barilla, which have vanished like the baseless fabric of a vision.

But of all the schemes with which my brain was then

ting ad-

the ned, new the nseand

has
year
and
sowy a
igar
the
ung

s an was ere-

for

ind, the ion, orever,

on to

en

ve

hiving, the localities suggested a plan that may be tried in any land.

I thought the lakes and quiet streams were not formed merely to beautify the landscape and suggest poetry, and was in consequence led, by hearing every where of the value of running streams and falling waters, or water privileges, as the Americans call them, to think where so much was to be seen, it ought not to be difficult to discover a mode of applying its power to mechanical purposes.

The practicability of this notion haunted me in my sylvan ruminations, and at last I hit upon what seemed as important a discovery as steam to myself, and it occurred to me, that to make an excavation in the banks, wherever water might be found, like a dry dock for example, and to build within it two mills, one for ordinary purposes, and the other to pump out the water, would supply the desideratum, for it would then be only necessary to conduct a stream to the first mill, which being set a going by it, the same water might be led on to the second on a lower level, and by its working pumped out again into the lake.* But, like my old friend, Mr. Thomson, the engineer, I may now say, "What is the use of my inventing." These things, however, serve to show the occasional current of my thoughts, when, besides my duties as superintendent for the Canada Company, I had leisure to think of other matters, at a period when a book was rarely in my hands, and rarer still a pen for composition.

^{*} The practicability of raising a stream of water back to its fountain head after it has set a mill a going, by machinery on the principle—of the forcing pump, may soon be tried. But possibly there exists a power in nature which may be applied with more simplicity. Between the pressure of the atmosphere, which forces water to rise in vacuum, and the attraction of the carth, this power may exist.

CHAPTER VII.

Resume personal narrative. Journey to Lake Huron. Lost ourselves at midnight in the forest, sixty miles from a known habitation. Alarming adventure. Scene at Goderich. Adieu.

The season of the year, winter, having necessarily suspended all out of door undertakings, I was spared from explaining the cause of the idleness around me; the result of my preparations to return to England. Past and performed transactions may be openly spoken of, but the unborn progeny of the future, are things which should be treated with circumspection.

Aware that my determination to return would probably terminate my superintendency, though not in dismissal, I did not choose that any one should be able to quote my intentions from me, and therefore prepared for the voyage as for a temporary excursion. At the same time, to myself, every transaction was conclusive, and with this secret feeling, I resolved to visit the new settlement at Goderich, by the road through the forest.

Accordingly, having made the necessary arrangements, I took my departure from Guelph for Lake Huron, in a sleigh. In the journey itself there was nothing to render it different from ordinary travelling in the woods; for at convenient distances a species of log taverns were erected, and the accommodations, though rude, were still such as took the chill, if the expression may be used, off the wilderness. I could not, however, but consider myself as arrived at the summit of my destiny, and it was not pleasant to think I had found there nothing but vexation of spirit.

My employment, as superintendent of the Canada Company, though not unmixed with the usual alloy which attends and troubles all human affairs, was congenial to my humour. I could desire none better, and though I may not be credited, had no wish for a lot of greater splendour. For my tasks were so evidently calculated to lessen the mass of afflictions, that, however teasing in the performance, they could not be contemplated without vivid delight. The emoluments were no doubt respectable, but I have ever regarded pecuniary matters as subordinate, and at that crisis, if a thought gravitated down towards them it was but for a moment, when I remembered my children.

At the hazard of appearing somewhat ridiculous by the disclosure, still it will be by some readily believed, that a stronger proof of the pleasure I took in my duties cannot be adduced, than when I say that my literary propensities were suspended, during my residence in Upper Canada, not from resolution, but because I had more interesting pastime. With me book-making has always been a secondary pursuit, arising from a facility in composition. I did then think myself qualified to do something more useful than "stringing blethers into rhyme," or writing clishmaclavers in a closet.

However, during my journey to the lonely shores of Lake Huron, I had time, as I sat solitary in the sleigh, to chew the cud of bitter thought. I felt myself unworthily treated, for every thing I had touched was prosperous, and my endeavours to foster the objects of my care were all flourishing, and, without the blight of one single blossom, gave cheering promises of ample fruit.

Profit to the Company, which I saw would come of course, was less my object than to build in the wilderness an asylum for the exiles of society—a refuge for the fleers from the calamities of the old world and its systems fore-doomed

In the course of the journey, a heavy fall of snow, which often wreathed itself to impassable heights in the forest

Lost om a lode-

spenplainf my ransny of cum-

bably al, I by ine as celing, the

eigh. erent discomchill, could mmit glade of the new road, obliged the sleighs to deviate into the woods, and we lost, in consequence, our way for some time. It was then near midnight, and the situation gave

" Ample room and verge enough"

to the necromancy of the imagination. We were about sixty miles within the depth of the primal forests. The moonlight only served to show the fulling flakes of snow.—All around was silence, and the winds slept even in the branches. We halted, where, by a strange glare reflected from the ground, we seemed in the spacious court of a college, solemn with overshadowing trees.

To proceed, or to remain till daylight, was about to be discussed, when the noise as of some huge wading animal arose, coming towards us. We had no arms. Presently a hoarse voice, uttering maledictions becoming an Italian bandit, was heard; but that which would have struck "terror to the soul of Richard" in the mountains of Abruccio, gave us courage. The sounds proceeded from a team with provisions, going our way, and fortunately they had not wandered; but the incident, which no telling can make awful, was truly sublime.—We soon after reached one of the receiving houses, where we stopt for the remainder of the night.

When we arrived at Goderich, I took up my lodgings in the same log house where I had staid with Dr. Dunlop when formerly there, in the course of the exploring expedition by the Bee.

The landscape was now covered with snow, and Lake Huron with ice, as far as the eye could reach; but the scene had undergone a greater change than even that produced by the procession of the seasons. A large portion of the spot, allotted for the town, was cleared of the trees, several houses were built, and the whole aspect of the place, owing to these social circumstances and the beautiful cheerfulness of the situation, was uncommonly inviting.

into some e

sixty moonAll nches.

the olemn

e disarose, arose, noarse t, was e soul arage. g our e inciime.-where

ngs in when

scene oduced of the s, sevplace, cheerNext day the wind blew so violently that I was obliged to keep within doors—the snow dry and penetrating, drifted with afflicting acerbity; but since I had been there before, news were to be collected, if those can be called such which related to, merely, better acquaintance with the neighbouring woods.

The following morning bright and calm, was spent in viewing the localities and the progress made in the settlement; but although not aware that anything was left unexamined, my eyes were cursory and myself listless; for it was not likely I should ever be there again; and let a man nerve himself ever so resolutely, there is sadness in a final thought, especially if, as in my case, it be attended with regrets and darkening prospects. Indignant reflections may appease farewell, nor was I without that acrid palliative.

The Canada Company had originated in my suggestions, it was established by my endeavours, organized, in disregard of many obstacles, by my perseverance, and, though extensive and complicated in its scheme, a system was formed by me upon which it could be with ease conducted. Yet without the commission of any fault, for I dare every charge of that kind, I was destined to reap from it only troubles and mortifications, and something which I feel as an attempt to disgrace me.

While my spirit was seething on the shores of Lake Huron, I could not refrain from thinking of one littleness very obvious, The Huron tract contained about sixteen hundred square miles, and it was divided into townships, after naming one for each of the Directors, there were three or four over, and these were called after men in office. To this certainly there could be no objection; but I confess it seemed to me to proceed from a lurking feeling of unprovoked contumely that I should have been passed over. It is, however, one of those things which the Directors can best account for. I am content with having formed the Company—nor am I the first parent that has had unfilial offspring.

Vol. II. L

Had the Company been one of those sordid concerns of which profit is the sole object, I would not say so much; but as it was fraught with benevolence, calculated to assuage distress in the mother country, and to improve the condition of the victims which that pressure forced to emigrate, I repine to see it sunk into a mere land-jobbing huxtry, and abortive in all the promises, but the payment, by which the government was induced to part with the lands.

My adieu to Lake Huron was a final farewell; for, from the moment I lost sight of its waters, I considered my connexion with the Company as closed. Reason, certainly, with its plausibility, endeavoured to persuade me that this was a fallacious presentiment, and that I did wrong, to honourable men, in thinking it possible that they could be accessary to the ruin and degradation of an individual.—And for what? That is to be explained.

ut as e dison of epine ortive vern-

from conwith was a trable to the That

CHAPTER VIII.

Speak of departure. Conduct of the settlers. Leave Guelph.

Letter in my behalf from the Lieutenant Governor to the
Secretary of State. Reach New York. Hear of my being
superseded. Arrival at Liverpool. Reach London.—
Consequences.

Soon after my return to Guelph, I spoke openly of my departure for England, without, howsoever, communicating the conclusion to which so many circumstances had led me namely, that there must be a determination somewhere to break up the Company, and previously to get rid of me, an apprehended obstacle to the scheme.

My own mind acquitted me of intentional error, and the evidences of prosperity around, were proof that I had not been injudicious: but my treatment of the settlers seemingly might have afforded some grounds to fear least I had given offence to them, for it is needless to say, that a society in which the restless and discontented probably predominated, is not easily managed. In this, however, I was agreeably disappointed; for in the morning I had fixed for my departure, they came in a body, in front of the house, and presented an address expressive of their thankfulness for my treatment of themselves, and their good wishes for my own return. For ceremonies of this sort I have no particular veneration, but, I confess, the circumstances in which I was placed, and the presentiment which oppressed me, rendered this unexpected compliment gratifying.

I left Guelph after breakfast, and proceeded to York on business, arising from irregularities of some of the clerks*; di-

^{*} Owing to the unaccountable manner in which I was left alone to organize so complicated a concern, I had seventeen clerks at different times, who, with the exception of three or four, were cashiered, or suspended, or changed.

recting my servant to make the best of his way with my luggage to Albany.

While at York, Sir John Colborne, the lieutenant-governor, had the kindness to write to the Secretary of State in favourable terms respecting me.

I crossed the lake and hastened on with what speed I could to New York, where the consul informed me that I was superseded by another gentleman; indeed he had the goodness to tell me something of this sort, in a letter which I had received on the evening before I left Guelph, but which then, as I was on the point of starting for England, excited no particular emotion. I could not, however, but discern that this appointment of a successor indicated a disposition to find me in fault; I still think so; nor was the resentment it excited mitigated by the inferences I had drawn.

Had not Mr. Buchanan stopped here, I would have acknowledged myself ever greatly obliged to him, but he concealed the intimation, made in a letter to himself, that my dismissal was final, and allowed me to leave my family in the woods of America, though he went the passage to England with me in the same ship; he probably meant kindly, but it was as mawkish as it was mistaken, for although a friendly feeling might dictate the proceeding and excuse its committal, it was, and is, regarded by me as an error of judgment.

On my arrival at Liverpool I learned, not certainly with consternation, that the Company was to be broken up, and that its inability to go on had been announced. I could learn nothing more, but there was enough in this communication to make me resolve to discover, if possible, the grounds of a measure that I had so anticipated, and which was so curiously, by a circuitous route, coming to pass.

On arriving in London, I went to the Canada House, as a matter of course, but, as it was not a court day, obtained no satisfaction. Mr. M'Gillivray, who acted in my absence, merely inquired if I had received the dispatches with which my

successor was charged, and after some short conversation he was obliged to leave me, not, however, till his manner had impressed my jealousy with something unsatisfactory. I say this, because I am not conscious that there had been any occurrence between him and me, that could have warranted his evident dryness. On the contrary, I considered him as a particular friend, and the want of cordiality on this occasion was obvious. Next morning I went to Mr. Downie, of Appin, to breakfast, who was then in parliament, and one of the Canada Company's Directors. In his manner I could discern no change, but jocular and friendly as usual, he did not appear to think the dismissal final; he only considered me recalled by the will of the proprietors, obliging the Directors to obey. His information perplexed me, and I resolved to make no further inquiry till the next court day.

My reception by the court was not remarkable, only I mentioned that it was strange they should think of such a disparaging measure as an abrupt dismissal, when in possession of my letter announcing my intended return. To this, one of the Directors, an old friend, made some observation, as if the circumstance of having received that letter had been overlooked; it might be so, but the remark passed unnoticed by the other gentlemen present.

I determined, however, to be present at an impending meeting of the proprietors, and if blame was imputed to me, to vindicate myself on the spot. That meeting was, however, skilfuly conducted. The whole character and effect and importance of my proceedings were kept out of view, but the general balance of my own accounts fairly enough stated. I would, perhaps, be doing wrong to ascribe this to any design, I was now, however, all eye, and could not but think that every thing meritorious was kept out of view, especially as the balance, which was of all my accounts, including the expenses of the office as well as of the settlements, was made conspicuous, leaving an impression that my expenditure had been lavish and inconsiderate. I do not say that the statement

e, as a ned no bsence, nich my

lug-

rnor,

fa-

eed I

I was

good-

I had

then.

o par-

this

id me

xcited

:nowl-

cealed

missal

ods of

me in

nawk-

might s, and

with

nd that

rn no-

tion to

, meas-

y, by a

L 2*

was meant to produce this effect, but I thought it was, and assert, in defiance of contradiction, that it was calculated to produce it.

In the Appendix the accounts are stated, and the excess of expenditure at Guelph, for which four thousand pounds were allowed, will be seen did not exceed that sum so much as seven hundred pounds, including forfeitures, although the progress of the settlement had been rapid, far beyond the most sanguine expectations; had I doubled the four thousand pounds, it would have been well laid out money. Nor was it supposed, when I went abroad, that the Company was to be sunk into a mere land jobbing speculation.

The general meeting was conclusive, and from private sources I learned that there was some negociations going on, between the Company and the government, which had for its object to persuade the government to take back the lands.— I had my suspicion that particular parties might step in and buy them, but this I resolved to prevent, not that I thought there was any thing very wrong in the transaction, because if the proprietors receded from paying up their capital, what else could be done, and why should wiser men forbear to pick up the pearl "cast away; at the same time I did think the proprietors impressed with a ruinous opinion of the concern by some sinister misrepresentation.

Acting upon the principle of resistance to the machination, which I conceived to be visible, I exhorted particular friends not to sell their stock, and tried to repress the panic among them, but my advice was disregarded, and I could not but ascribe the inattention with which I was heard, as one of the effects of my dismissal.

My efforts were not, however, restrained by the rebuff. I begged a friend to ascertain the effect, in the Colonial Office, of Sir John Colborne's letter, and the answer being satisfactory, I next day solicited an audience of Sir George Murray, then Secretary of State, and represented to him my opin-

to cess

and

nuch
h the
l the
usand
was

rivate
ig on,
for its
nds.—
in and
hought
ecause
l, what
bear to
d think

ination, friends among not but e of the

concern

e rebuff, onial Ofeing satrge Murmy opinion of the Company. What ensued was not important, but his manner left no doubt upon my mind, that the question of taking back the lands and charter depended on a contingency. that contingency, my awakened suspicion made me suppose, was a reference to Sir John Colborne, and I had no doubt he would recommend the acceptance of the proposal. since ascertained that this was the very course pursued, and that to the consternation of those who had so strenuously achieved my ruin, he recommended the resumption of the The effect of his answer, as communicated through Sir George Murray to the Court of Directors, rendered hopeless the machination which so many circumstances made me think probable; and the proprietors have to thank Sir John Colborne, that instead of gloating over their high priced stock, as they are now doing with chuckling, they are not seen going about the Exchange with their fingers in their mouth, and their eyes watering.

CHAPTER IX.

A letter from my sister. Her arrival in London.— Troubles.

In the midst of this "ravelled skein of care" I received a letter from my sister, in answer to mine announcing my arrival, mentioning her intention to take a jaunt for the summer with her daughter, and delicately inquiring if it would be agreeable to me to bring her to London. I was then in one of my absent fits, and delighted with the prospect of seeing them, forgot my troubles, and instantly invited them to come.

There was rashness in this, and it was soon repented; for I had it not in my power to pay them ordinary attention, and the circumstances with which I had been superseded, justified me in waiting to see how old intimates would act towards me.

The journey to London, though kindly undertaken, was, perhaps, not altogether on my account. My niece had received a legacy of three thousand pounds from her paternal grandfather, which, with other inheritances and prospects, made her fortune so considerable, that her mother, with the far forecasting spirit of the Scottish nation, thought it entitled her to see something of the world, not for any good that was to be met with, of course, in Vanity Fair, but that by beholding the general nothingness, she might be the better pleased with the quiet seclusion of her future life.

Scarcely had they arrived in town, when the natural effects of my recall began to manifest themselves, by applications for the payment of two accounts. I had left, as I have mention-

ed, authority with the accountant of the Canada Company to receive payment of a thousand pounds a year of my salary to discharge, in the first place, these and other small accounts, and I had drawn upon him for a half-yearly payment for the education of my three sons, who were at Reading School, with one of my oldest acquaintances in England, the well known Rev. Dr. Valpy.

The bill had been sent by me to the accountant to be transmitted, when accepted, to the reverend doctor, but it was not so done; and accordingly, soon after my arrival, before I knew well where I was, I received a letter from the doctor, requesting payment. At that time I could only beg him to give me a little indulgence, and I thought to him this request might be made, because he was not only a personal friend of twenty-five years' standing, but had been for about forty years a partner with my wife's father. Soon after my letter I received a formal demand for payment from his solicitors. This sharp practice was none blunted to the sense by the excoriation that my other misfortunes had previously produced. The answer was similar to what I had given to the doctor himself, and was followed by an arrest. This was perfeetly legal. I had, as plain as the sun at noon day, incurred the penalty, and in such cases, though the debt was undisputed,

"The law allows it and the court awards"

The incident, however, only verified the proverb, which says, "it never rains but it pours." By giving the necessary bail, I fortunately had not occasion to inform my sister till that was done, but it undoubtedly hastened her departure from town.

When the writ was returnable I determined to surrender; still, however, hoping, that when the doctor saw me so resolute he would order "the gore-dropping fangs of the law" to be relaxed. I was mistaken.

Before, however, finally resolving on any thing, I con-

eived

g my
r the
if it
I was
espect
ivited

; for , and stified wards

, was, ad reternal spects, th the atitled t was scholddeased

effects ons for entionceived it but right to beg he would relent in his proceedings; for he is a man of sagacity enough to discern that the law of arrest is criminal in its provisions, against such as are prevented by misfortune from paying just debts.

At this crisis of perplexities, the accountant distributed among the share-holders the untrue pamphlet alluded to, which only verified my conceptions of his morbid vanity.-Those passages in which he attacked me, required an answer, and although not in a condition to give it properly, I made the attempt. Had I been in less trouble, the scorpions of the scourge might have shewn themselves more exasperated. it was, I made no scruple of employing the right epithets for the actions, and to give them emphasis, placed the words between inverted commas; for although not apt to act according to the motto of my country—"Nemo me impune lacessit" there are occasions when, in my opinion, if it be not Christian to do so, it is at least human, especially when a man desires to provoke a reply. A copy of my pamphlet was sent to the different proprietors, and some of my particular friends. to return to the personal narrative.

As I had by this time ascertained, that independent of a security given for my chief debt, and several farms in Canada sufficient for the others, I was only embarrassed to about the arrears of an annuity of three hundred pounds, [that though irregularly paid, I had long counted on,] I saw what was in my power; and pride was appeased by the consideration that I had always made more than I expended, and that it was entirely owing to others not fulfilling their engagements to me, I had ever suffered any perplexity in money matters. I therefore submitted to the insolvent act.

To some persons the mention of such a step would be disagreeable, nor is it to me a boast of pride; but the consciousness of not being forced to it by extravagance in living or imprudent speculation in business, mitigates the mortifying reflection, especially when it is recollected that the moral obligation can never be removed till the debt is paid. The

dings; law of revent-

ributed ded to, nity.—
nswer, nde the of the ed. As ets for ords becording accessit" hristian desires t to the

nt of a
Canada
the arthough
s in my
that I
entireme, I
herefore

s. But

be disansciousg or imrtifying moral The law, indeed, is advantageous to debtors by exempting them from arrest, and giving them the power of determining in their own minds, after the discharge, who shall be first paid. Nor was its operation without beneficial influence on me. I felt my independence augmented, by looking at poverty undismayed at her emaciation. I had, however, "given hostages to society," and was no longer at liberty to consult my own wishes, and therefore immediately began to build a new scheme of life, in which the secondary condition of authorship was thus made primary.

This transaction and the winding up of my philanthropic dream is stated with as little emotion as possible, but it was not so felt. I shall not, however, make any further attempt to draw upon the sympathy of the reader.

EPOCH EIGHTH.

CHAPTER I.

Lawrie Todd. Southennan. Think of emigrating. Two kindly circumstances. Life of Lord Eyron.

Although supported by the consciousness of having acted properly, in a crisis of my life most trying to one of my temperament, I yet retired from the arena of business with the sullenness of a vanquished bull. Aware how such things are received by the world, I thought myself capable of acting a negative part, and resolved to devote myself to the sedentary pursuits of literature; not even to renew any acquaintance whatever with former associates, except with the members of my own family, unless there was some demonstration on their part.

This morose feeling was probably natural to the circumstances, and for some time I adhered to my stubborn determination, completing in as satisfactory a state of misanthropy as I could well work myself into, the novel of Lawrie Todd.

As I have explained in the preface to a late edition, dictated from my bed, the story is not altogether fictitious, at least in the earlier parts, but in the course of writing it I had frequent reminiscences of former enjoyments, which have made it seemingly very true; but an author is not the best judge of his own inventions.

When Lawrie Todd was finished, I commenced the novel of Southennan, in which I have endeavoured to embody scenes and fancies of my youth with an antiquarian description of Scottish manners in the reign of Queen Mary. A lucubra-

tion not sufficiently appreciated, while the work, by its historical characters, has been regarded too much as a mere romance. Indeed, I have several times had a shrewd suspicion, that my obsolete lore and knowledge, have never been valued at their worth, notwithstanding my endeavour to follow with great strictness that rule of art which requires from the historical painter, not only accuracy of costume and character, but precision in the exhibitions of still life.

The origin of Southennan is, to myself at least, interesting. At a short distance on the south side of the village of Fairlie. in Ayrshire, stands the ruins of the ancient house of Southennan. I know nothing whatever of its history, but was told in my boyhood a vague tradition, which had something mysterious about it, and which still lingers in my recollection; namely, that the house belonged to a branch of the ancient noble family of Semple; that the last inhabitants had been Reman Catholics, who went away into Spain at the period of the Reformation, and that they were never more heard of. In riper years I was on the point of hearing a more authentic story from a gentleman who lived in the neighbourhood, but I stopped him in the beginning of the recital, for I saw it would dispel the phantasms with which the old legend had peopled my imagination; as he began by telling me that it had been formerly a nunnery, the obvious inference from which was. that the sisterhood had gone into Spain. However, I did not choose to hear this prosaic item of a chronicle, and have continued to this day to cherish my early dreams about Southennan, undisturbed by any matter of fact; pausing occasionally in the journals of my juvenility between Irvine and Greenock, to ponder of strange things amidst the solitude of the ruins.

The situation is lone and picturesque, at the foot of a green mountain, on a little plain spreading to the sca, with a garden extending southwards, which in my imagination is still in blossom, as if I saw it in the spring of the year. I could draw the landscape still, though years and days and sadder things have happened to me since I was there.

Vol. II. M

Two

acted ny temith the ngs are cting a dentary intance nbers of tion on

umstanerminaropy as 'odd.

dictated least in requent it seem-

novel of scenes ption of lucubra-

There is no accounting for the manner in which some incidents become to the mind more interesting than others, and I cannot explain why the obscure story about the wandering away into Spain of the papistical Semples should have been so mysteriously wonderful to me; but they have always been so, and from the days of my dramatic propensities, have interested my imagination. Once, long ago, I began to compose something most tragical of the heir's return, resembling in its incidents Lord Byron's Lara.

While engaged in writing Southennan, I became occasionally tired of literature, and as my family were still in Canada and the season for recalling them coming on, I began to feel its influences stirring me to activity. It thus happened, that one morning, as the old ballad which describes the conquest of France by Henry V. says,

"As the king lay musing on his bed, He bethought himself upon a time, Of a tribute that was due him from France, Which had not been paid for so long a time"—

I recalled to mind how I had been frustrated in my hopes by the malappropriation of the money to be paid to Government by the Canada Company, and I thought that if they would give me a grant of land in compensation, I would emigrate. Accordingly, I went immediately after breakfast and called upon Lord———, who had been always extremely kind to me, and requested his lordship to speak of my object to Sir George Murray, the Secretary of State, with whom I supposed he had naturally some influence. His lordship, with the utmost alacrity, walked afterwards with me to Downing Street, and saw Sir George; but he was unsuccessful, which obliged me to submit to my fate.

In the course of a few days after, Mr. Ellice called upon me on his way to the House of Commons, and invited me to dinner with so much friendliness, that it required some effort to maintain on my part the old reciprocal case. His visit was me incies, and I
undering
ve been
tys been
tye intecompose

ng in its

occasionoccasionoccasional occasional occasional occasional occasional occasional occasional occasionoccasionoccasionoccasionoccasionoccasionoccasionoccasionoccasionada occasionada occasiona

hopes by menent by suld give tte. Aclled upon and to me, ir George ed he had most alacand saw ed me to

led upon ted me to ome effort visit was the first that I received from all my old acquaintances, and I hope it will not be soon forgotten.

Sick of Composition, gratified by the alacrity of Lord—, and truly so by the visit of Mr. Ellice, I began to feel a sort of moral galvanic energy, and turned my thoughts into their former habitudes, but saw no feasible object to which they could be directed. I began, however, insensibly to shake off my drowse, and wrote for my family, conscious from what I knew of myself, that I would soon find something to do.

In this state of things, Messrs. Colburn and Bentley, the book-sellers proposed, that I should undertake to write the life of Lord Byron, to which I readily agreed, and the result is the book in the hands of the public. But connected with it are many things that require to be discussed deliberately in another chapter, for few books have been more severely and coarsely condemned; -as few towards which approbation has been more decidedly expressed. The latter feeling, however, respecting the work, begins to prevail, and the former will, probably ultimately be extinguished; for it is a memoir which says all the good that can be said of an extraordinary man, written by one who had some opportunities of observing his qualities, and who shut his ear and his heart alike to the flatteries of his friends and the detractions of his enemies. It was impossible to conceal that he had a capricious temper, and was actuated by a curious sinister egotism; but withal, he was possessed of rare talents, and with them much of that magnanimity which is ever associated with genius.

CHAPTER II.

Doubts of Byron's originality. Plagiarisms from Pickersgill. Plagiarisms complained of by Mr. Moore. Verses by Mr. Moore.

When the Life of Byron was written, I entertained a higher opinion of his originality than I do now, for I am reduced to the alternative of considering him as one of the most extraordinary plagiarists in literature, unless it can be shown that he is the author of a four volume novel, from which the incidents, colouring, names, and characters, of his most renowned productions are derived. The circumstances are these:—

Some time after the publication of my memoir of his life, Mrs. Thomas Sheridan, in allusion to the manner in which I had spoken in it respecting Byron's peculiar genius, mentioned to me, that if I would look into an old romance, called the "Three Brothers," written by one Pickersgill, the use Lord Byron had made of it, would surprise me.

Next day I procured a copy, and observed, before looking at the contents, various notes and scrawls, implying a belief on the part of the writer of them, that the work itself might have been a juvenile production of his lordship. On perusal, the coincidences of thought and invention were wonderful, and it exhibited that singular hue of gloomy fancy, his distinguishing characteristic. As I proceeded, the internal evidence greatly supported the hypothesis.

On looking at the volumes, it was evidently a youthful effusion; the first consisted of only two hundred and thirty pages, the second increased to three hundred, the third was no less than four hundred and sixty-eight, and the fourth four hundred and sixty-two; a work so divided did not much look like the

production of a person come to years of discretion. Not, however, at that time having leisure myself to pursue the investigation, I deemed it so curious, that I wrote respecting it to a friend, and requested him to examine, at his leisure, the book, which he did, and the result of his lucubration is in the Appendix, republished from the Monthly Magazine.

My friend thinks that he has discovered who Pickersgill was—and, certainly, at the conclusion of the fourth volume, there is a passage which shews that the author was four years older than Lord Byron; but if he was not the same, the similarity of his mind is the most extraordinary. The novel of the "Three Brothers" is so odious, in passages however powerful, that I could not read it with any pleasure, but whoever will take the trouble to dip into it, (particularly the fourth volume,) will have no doubt with me, that if Pickersgill and Byron were not one and the same boy, it exhibits most wonderful intellectual resemblance.

If his lordship were not the author of the "Three Brothers," it is strange that he should have made no scruple of using the names as well as the thoughts. It is true that his lordship, in a note prefixed to his "Deformed Transformed," says, that it is derived from the "Three Brothers," from which Mr. Lewis constructed the "Wood Demon;" but the manner in which he speaks of it proves nothing: on the contrary, it is so coldly alluded to, that one could never imagine he had made such extraordinary use of it, if it be the production of another.

Pick-Ver-

higher

extraon that
the inenownnese:—
this life,

which I

ntioned

led the

se Lord

looking a belief f might perusal, nderful, his disnal evi-

ul effuy pages, no less nundred like the

In making this statement, I am actuated by something like an author's feeling, in consequence of some notice of me by Byron himself, which Moore, in his Life, has mentioned, with other gossipry that it would not have derogated from his wisdom to have suppressed. The first memorandum alluded to is:-" Galt called, to ask some one to speak to Raymond in favour of his play.* We are old fellow-travellers, and with all his eccentricities, he has much strong sense, experience of the world, and, as far as I have seen, a good-natured philosophical fellow. I showed him Sligo's letter on the reports of the Turkish girl's adventure at Athens, soon after it happened. He, Lord Holland, Lewis, Moore, and Rogers, and Lady Melbourne have seen it. Murray has a copy. I thought it had been unknown, and wish it were; but Sligo arrived only some days after, and the rumours are the subject of his letter. That I shall preserve; it is as well. Lewis and Galt were both horrified."†

The second memorandum is-

"Galt says there is a coincidence between the first part of the Bride and some story of his, whether published or not I know not, never having seen it. He is almost the last person on whom any one would commit a literary larceny, and I am not conscious of any wilting thefts on any of the genus; as to originality, all pretensions are ludierous, there is nothing new under the sun,"

Vol. I. page 580.

And the third-

" Sunday, December 12th, 1813.

"By Galt's answer I find it is some story in real life, and

† This refers to the incident on which the story of the Giaour is founded. I knew the Turkish girl; she was very coarse, really more so than "the Maid of Athens."

^{*} This was an alteration of the "Bondman," of Massinger, which I made in consequence of some conversation with Bartley. The manuscript had gone amissing, and being acquainted with Byron, who was of the Drury Lane Committee, I asked him to speak to Raymond about it. It says but little for the Committee that a play of Massinger's should have been irrecoverably lost. It have no particular recollection now of what were the alterations, but I think they were chiefly confined to a condensation of the dialogue, with a few verbal corrections here and there. However, the fact that a manuscript of one of the best of Massinger's plays being lost by the Committee, requires no comment.

g like
me by
l, with
m his
lluded
ymond
s, and

experiatured the re-

after it Rogers, opy. I

t Sligo subject wis and

part of or not I t person nd I am as; as to ing new

e 580.

1813. life, and

ich I made script had rury Lane s but little ecoverably ations, but ue, with a nanuscript e, requires

s founded.
"the Maid

not any work, with which my late composition coincides—it is still more singular, for mine is drawn from existence also."

In writing the life I had forgot the circumstance; but rummaging among my papers for this work, I discovered an original note of Lord Byron's, written at the time, and on the very subject, which he deemed so important as to record, and Mr. Moore to give to the public. It is as follows:—

"Decr. 10th 1813.

"MY DEAR GALT,

- "The coincidence, I assure you, is a most unintentional and unconscious one; nor have I even a guess where or when, or in what manner, it exists. It is rather odd there is a Mr. Semple, who, I have since heard, wrote a prose story like it; but on its being pointed out to me, the resemblance was so slight as to become almost imperceptible—at least in my eyes; further than that there were two lovers who died.
- "Be that as it may, I certainly had read no work of his or yours when this story was written that at all contained the likeness, or suggested the idea. I had a living character in my eye for Zuleika; but what is still more extraordinary, a living poet† writes to me, that I have actually anticipated a tale he had ready for the press, and which he admits it is impossible I could ever have seen or heard of in its details.
- "Raymond has heard from me, and has promised an answer He shall be jogged again if this won't do.
- "Any thing that I can do in accelerating your pursuits shall be done readily and with pleasure, by, ever yours,

"BYRON."

"John Galt, Esq."

The queerest thing of all, however, in this proof that murder will out, is, that Mr. Moore himself is the poet falluded to by Byron, in the letter respecting the Bride of Abydos. To go further with a curious matter; my tale of the Omen, written

^{*} The Bride of Abydos,

[†] Mr. Moore, with reference to "Lalla Rook."

long after, is founded on the circumstance which I stated to his Lordship, and which has been the cause of this ado. It was reviewed by Sir Walter Scott.

The bringing to light the secret of such an allegation, as Byron, in his spleen, seems to have thought the imputation of borrowing from me, was to the disparagement of his genius, is amusing enough, but that the proclaimer of his Lordship's indignation, should have himself, on the very same occasion, acted the same part that I did, is very diverting.* I am malicious enough to rejoice at this discovery, because I owe Mr. Moore something for attacking me in verse, in which I am no match for him, for using an idea, which he himself first sported in an oration at a public dinner on the 18th of March, 1822, in answer to a compliment from the late Marquis of London-derry. I mean the immortalization of insects in amber, but to be sure, the speech was spoken after dinner.

However, I am really a very great admirer of Mr. Moore, and I hope he will be kind enough to laugh at this; for, in truth, I am like the Frenchman whom Louis the XVth once met in a crowd, who afterwards boasted to his friends that the king had spoken to him. "That is a great honour," said they; "what did he say to you?" "He bade me, "replied the man, "be so good as to stand out of the way.";

"ALARMING INTELLIGENCE.

"REVOLUTION IN THE DICTIONARY-ONE

GALT AT THE HEAD OF IT!

"God preserve us!—there's nothing now safe from assault;
Thrones toppling around—churches brought to the hammer,
And accounts have just reached us, that one Mr. Galt
Has declared open war against English and Grammar!

7 Among other acctous spirits by whom my Life of Byron was attacked Mr. Moore does not stand unsuspected. In a Dublin newspaper appeared the following jeu d'esprit.

^{*} I wonder if Mr. Moore knows any thing of an Irish translation of Anacreon, so like his own, that wicked people have thought that more might be said about it than has been.

ted to

ion, as tation enius, lship's casion, mali-

e Mr. am no sported 1822.

ondon-, but to

Moore, for, in the once disthat and the the

ner,

of Anamight be attacked appeared "He had long been suspected of some such design, And the better his wicked intents to arrive at, Had lately 'mong C-ld-n's troops of the line (The penny-a-line men) enlisted as private,

"There schooled, with a rabble of words at command, Scotch, English, and slang in promiscuous alliance, He, at length, against Syntux has taken his stand, And sets all the nine parts of Speech at defiance.

"Next advices, no doubt, further facts will afford;
In the mean time the danger most imminent grows;
He has taken the life of one eminent lord,
And whom he'll next murder, the Lord only knows."

" Wednesday evening.

"Since our last, matters luckily look more serene;—
Tho' the rehel, 'tis stated, to aid his defection,
Has seized a great powder—no!—puff Magazine,
And th' explosions are dreadful in every direction!

"What his meaning exactly is, nobody knows,
As he talks (in a strain of intense botheration)
Of lyrical 'il:cor'*, 'gelatinous'† prose,
And a mixture called "amber immortalization.'‡

Now he raves of a bard, he once happened to meet,
Seated high among 'rattlings,' and 'churming a sonnet ;
Now talks of a mystery wrapped in a sheet,
With a halo (by way of a night-cap) upon it?

"We shudder in tracing these terrible lines;—
Something bad they must mean, tho' we can't make it out;
For, whate'er may beguess'd of Galt's secret designs,
That they're all anti-English no Christian can doubt."

At some risk of sparring with an experienced hand, I replied:—

TIT FOR TAT.

r

What the devil!—no, no, it cannot be true,—
Tommy Little, a Dublin dominie!—poh!—
He can sing about flowers, ripe lips, and green bowers,
Is it sing that I said?—he's the boy that can low.

" \S Sitting amidst the shrouds and rattlings, churming an inarticulate melody.—id.

[&]quot;* That dark diseased ichor which colored his effusions.—Galt's Life of Byron."

[&]quot;† That gelatinous character of their effusions.—id."

"I The poetical embalmment, or rather amber immortalization.—id."

H.

To stand on a stool, like a duck on a stone,

By the sweet smelling Liffy, and threaten in alt,—
No—no, sir, 'tis "fudge;',* he may groan, growl, and
grudge;

With his birch on a barrel, he couldn't reach Galt.†

TIT.

'Tis true, he is not, in all other respects,
Unfit for the office:—I grant it at once,—
There's Anacreon—yes! My God! what is this?
You blush! but he never did steal ‡ from a dunce.

ıv.

I own that such clusters of lillies and roses
The cheerful old Greek would have sneezed at as snuff;
But the work now supplies trunks, tartlets, and pies,
With the ditties of gay Mr. Moore, to enough.

v.

He murdered that Greek—can his conscience deny, He's a criminal direful, audacious, and dread? He attempts the dear lives of the friends he survives,— A buzzing blue-bottle that feeds on the dead.

VI.

If justice were done, the "gelatinous" hard (Like "ichor" that flows from a feculent sore) Might run his loose rhymes, refined for the Times,—
The flies that make rampant can never do more.

VII

As reptiles in bottles, his books on a shelf,—
He may to a lengthened existence aspire,
But in "amber" salvation "immortalization,"
He can but exist a small thing—a pismire.

VIII.

But. sir, I had almost forgotten to say

That the sorter of shreds with his patches** between,

Vide the Irish translation of Anacreon alluded to.

n.ay have read Pope's poems, may never have seen such things.

** "A thing of shreds and patches."

[&]quot;| He was a mystery in a winding sheet, crowned with a halo.—id." A slang term. See Moore's Epistle to Big Ben, The Fudge Family, and The Two penny Post bag.
† Galt's high, and Moore's low.

An old pun of George III., applicable to Moore's works about Byron and Sheridan.

^{||} Gelatinous.—For literal meaning see Dictionary for figurative, applied to a thing without sense, as here used, see many of Mr. Moore's Melodies.

|| An allusion to things sometimes seen in amber. Mr. Moore, though he

Is all in the wrong, like a frog with a song,-His guessings at Fraser†† are gropings of spleen.

A word of advice if I can ere I close (While pen-guns in vollies around me are cracking:) Of this be ye sure,-whether Byron or Moore.-All quartos are not sold by rhyme puffs like blacking. ‡

alo.-id." mily, and

out Byron

ve, applied Melodies. though he

^{†† &}quot;Mr. Galt is supposed to be the editor of Fraser's Magazine." They do him honour.

‡! See Mr Warren's poetry.

CHAPTER III.

Incidental fracas with Sir John Cam Hobhouse. Pot versus kettle. His appearance in Fraser's shop. The Countess Guicciolli.

The publication of my Life of Byron was attended with one unpleasant circumstance. From the period I had met Mr. Hobhouse (now Sir John Cam) with his Lordship, my acquaintance with that gentleman had continued; it was not very cordial at any time. but he had talent that ensured respect, and it was desirable to know him; my estimate of his tact and discernment, however, was not in the end, as it appeared, altogether confirmed; I gave him credit for more knowledge of the world than he possessed.

With the favourable inclination which one cannot but feel towards another met in friendless scenes, on Mr. Hobhouse making his debut as a public man, I was not apprehensive that he would regard it as an offence, if I made him the subject of a little literary badinage. In consequence, I represented, in the Ayrshire Legatees, a red-hot tory gentleman giving an account of a few whigs, and, among others, I made him say, as a sterling tory, what he thought of Mr. Hobhouse; it was not my own opinion of the characters on which Andrew Pringle is made to animadvert, but the opinions which I thought the model of Andrew Pringle likely to entertain.— Nor had I any reason, for several years after, to think that this description had displeased Mr. Hobhouse, but when I published my Life of Byron, an answer to a note which I had written to him, took the scales from my eyes, and I could not but think it rather odd that for so long a time he should have

"Nursed his wrath to keep it warm,"

against me, for taking so great a liberty with him. As the

matter was at first not very important, I was disposed myself, to put the best construction on his first letter, and to overlook the very obvious import of its contents. But, somehow, he made more of the matter than I thought was wise, and, finally, I was induced to publish the whole affair as it may be found in Fraser's Magazine. Had the business rested here, I would have taken no other notice of it, but, shortly after the publication, I happened one day to be in Fraser's (the bookseller) inner room, looking at a pamphlet, with the door shut. While there, some person came into the front shop, and I heard by the cold iron clanking of his voice, that he was remonstrating at something or another. When he went away, Fraser, opening the glass-door, came to me laughing, and mentioned that Mr. Hobhouse had called, in a towering passion, about my publication of Pot versus Kettle, and that he complained of the article, which led Fraser to mention that I was in the other room, and he had no doubt would reply to any thing he had to say. Mr. Hobhouse, however chose to go away expressing magnificently something about considering me as a bookseller's back, too insignificant, of course, for his high mightiness to notice.

I was exceedingly glad to have nettled him so much, for two reasons; first, because I had only made Andrew Pringle speak of him quite as mildly as any out-and-out tory could do of one who was supposed to be a whig; and, secondly, because, as Pot versus Kettle will show, he made much ado about nothing.

Some time after, Mr. Ellice invited me to Hoarsly Park, and by a mere accident I missed falling in with Sir John there, for he left it on the day prior to my arrival, and I had been two days later of going than I intended. Since that time, I have never seen him except when he passed me one day without recognition, in the park.

In mentioning these circumstances, I am as accurate as my recollection enables me to be, and because, although Sir John Vol. II. N

ot ver-Coun-

ith one met Mr. my acvas not red ree of his it apor more

out feel

obhouse hensive the sub-I reprentleman I made bhouse; ch Anwhich I

rtain.—
nk that
en l publ I had
ould not
e should

As the

is so mightily offended, I do not mean to lessen the cause for his attempt to be so fastidious. At the same time, it gives me no pleasure to have excited such resentment.

But although I probably regretted at the time having incurred so much animosity, in addition to the strictures of the periodical Aristarchuses, the Life of Byron was the means of giving me some pleasure; and when the celebrated Countess Guicciolli and her brother Count Gamba came to England, gave me a legitimate cause to seek to know them, and opportunities of personally estimating those attractions which were so commonly supposed to be extraordinary.

I found her appearance exactly what a friend described who had seen her in Italy. I had given him a letter to Lord Byron himself, who introduced her to him. She was better, however, than Mr. Leigh Hunt would lead one to suppose, when he speaks of her as "a buxom parlour boarder," although not that "creature of the element" which enamoured report had delighted to adorn. Perhaps I saw her at first to some disadvantage, for she was exposed to a trying contrast by being seated beside the "most gorgeous Lady Blessington;"* her bust reminded me of the description of Dudu in Don Juan; but her general figure was " of stature low," and, except when sitting, she was not particularly graceful. But, though uncommonly fair, I did not think her beauty very brilliant: she possessed, however, ene peculiar charm which must have had great influence on a man of Byron's temperament, much naivete; I think, in this respect, more than any other young woman I ever met with, scattering remarks of which she did not herself appear sensible of their force and engaging simplicity. In manners, she partook of that ease and temperate gaiety which distinguishes the Italian ladies from those of every other country: but in this she was not in any degree superior to many women here, nor did she evince that hardihood so often assumed by some ladies of

^{*} A title conferred on the Countess by that renowned Greek king the late Dr. Parr.

use for t gives

ving inures of e means Countess England, and ops which

escribed to Lord s better, suppose, ler," alnamourr at first ing condy Blesof Dudu re low," graceful. r beauty r charm f Byron's ct, more cattering e of their partook of the Italthis she e, nor did

ladies of

fashion about as alluring as fard and rouge. She was, certainly, unaffected without vulgarity, and though always natural, there was occasionally in her naivete, what the admirers of artificial proprieties might have thought not sufficiently sustained, inflexions liable to be misrepresented by the invidious as allied to silliness: she had, however, none of that quality, yet she may have allowed sayings to escape, sometimes, more pleasing than admirable.

Her regard for the memory of Lord Byron was openly professed, and by those who knew her best she was deemed sincere; but I have heard it said that she reverenced his Lordship rather too much to love him well: it may be so, but we know that the fondest female affection may exist along with great mental admiration. There was a little seasoning of enthusiasm about the Guicciolli, and the indiscriminate might have imagined the expressions of it as too intellectual to indicate passion.

CHAPTER IV.

Editor of the Courier. Politics of the paper. Whigs and Tories. Qualities of a newspaper editor. Authors.

While engaged in writing the Life of Lord Byron, Mr. Lockhart, of whose continued friendship in my troubles I must ever retain a very grateful recollection, called one day on me, accompanied by Mr. Murray, the bookseller, to ascertain if the editorship of the Courier would be agreeable, intimating that perhaps it might be obtained. In my unsocial sullenness, and the sudden blight shed on all my hopes, together with my desire to live a recluse life, there was joy in this friendly communication; and the result, after some time, with a visit from Mr. William Stewart, the principal proprietor, led to the appointment.

It did not appear that there was any particular craft requisite to conduct a newspaper, and I knew myself possessed of sources of information, independent of those belonging to the Courier, which might eccasionally be of some use. The only kind of scruple that I felt, if such it may be called, was ir thinking the politics of the journal a little too ardent for the spirit of the times, and, in consequence, my first object was to render them more suitable to what I apprehended was the wholesome state of opinion, preparatory to introducing occasionally more of disquisition into the articles. It was obvious that a change of the kind contemplated, did not require to be produced with a flourish of trumpets, and I adopted a gradual and less ostentatious course; for be it remembered. that any apparent and sudden change in the dogmas of a newspaper, is hazardous to the property embarked in it. cordingly, without manifesting particular solicitude to make

myself remarkable, I began by attempting gradually to alleviate the ultra toryism of the paper, by explanations of more liberality than the sentiments of any party.

In this endeavour, it was some encouragement to proceed that several of my unobstrusive retractations were approved, without causing any diminution in the circulation of the journal.

All my life I have been, as the reader may see by these pages, a tory, as much as a man could be with whom politics have ever been secondary. But I have been no more so than my temperament made me; indeed, I have always thought that the innate character had more to do with the distinctive marks of whigs and tories, than the bigots on either side, in their pride of mind, admit. Probably, owing to this cause, I have never considered the esoteric doctrines of my associates very seriously, at least it has so happened, that my most intimate friends have been all whigs, especially those who had the most in their power by which I might have been benefited. Ido not know if it be allied to this peculiar taste, that some of the purest characters I have ever known are Roman catholics, and the most sordid, sectarians and presbyterians. Speculative opinions have less to do than is supposed with the conduct of men. Those who obey the impulses of heaven, are as likely to act rightly as the professors of obedience to human reason. But to return to the Courier.

I had not been long installed as editor, till I perceived that the business would not suit me. In point of emolument it was convenient, but, as I have elsewhere shown, money matters have ever been, perhaps too slightly, regarded by me, and my resignation, though it partook of that promptitude of enunciation which all my decisions have uniformly manifested, was, however, the result of very solemn reflection. To men who have juster notions of the value of money than I have ever entertained, not from persuasion, but from habit, if not

N 2*

gs and 's.

on, Mr.
ubles I
e day on
scertain
intimasullenogether
in this
e time,
proprie-

t requiessed of to the The oned, was dent for et was to was the ag occaas obvi-

opted a mbered, a newsit. Ac-

to make

require

constitutional carelessness, my resignation in such a crisis of fortune will not be easily comprehensible; but to those who think, as the old song sings, that there are things "which gold can never buy," no further explanation can be necessary.

My connection with the Courier was, however, attended with one agreeable circumstance. I have more than once already mentioned a curious sort of relish which I enjoy from original characters, and I am sure Mr. W----- Swill not be offended to think that I consider him as having claims to my regard, owing to the unimpaired stamp and mintage of his nature, independent of his worth as a friend. No reason can be assigned for a predilection which, from my earliest childhood, I have vividly felt, but among other attractions which are fading to me from the world, is variety in characters. My ladies are reduced to three, the number of the graces; one in her eighty-eighth year, another about fourscore, and the third says, herself, that she is not more than seventy-five, a very accomplished person, who might have been a countess, had she not consulted her heart more than her head, but she made, for the honour of her sex, that mistake.

No species of literature affords so wide a scope for arrogance, or calls for less knowledge, than the editorship of a newspaper.--But it does require some knowledge, though of a kind not very worshipful.

An editor ought to be acquainted with the private history of public men, and the more invidious his information is, the greater will be his advantage, for somehow the world thinks that base and bad motives have a stronger, a more acrid, influence over the human affairs than they really have, because the sordid prudent preach that mankind should be treated as rogues, till they are found to be only fools. But such preachers, however, prove that they should not themselves be trusted. He is actuated by another than a wicked spring of action, who believes himself capable of voluntarily injuring others.—It is, however, too much the case with newspa-

per editors to represent the political adversaries, whom they, for a time, may find it expedient to assail, as instigated by derelict and sinister intentions. And the morality of society is, perhaps, fortunate in the ephemeral nature of their animosities.

At no time, as I frankly confess, have I been a great admirer of mere literary character; to tell the truth, I have sometimes felt a little shame-faced in thinking myself so much an author, in consequence of the estimation in which I view the professors of book-making in general. A mere literary man—an author by profession—stands but low in my opinion, and the reader will, perhaps, laughingly say, "it is a pity I should think so little of myself." But though, as the means of attaining ascendency and recreation in my sphere, I have written too much, it is some consolation to reflect that

" I left no calling for the idle trade."

This I assert with confidence, for, in looking back through the long vista of a various life, I cannot up braid myself with having neglected one task, or left one duty unperformed, either for the thrift or "fancy work" of letters.

isis of e who which essary.

tended n once enjoy S— having np and friend.

attraciety in
ber of
ut foure than
t have

at misr arroip of a

ugh of

re than

history
is, the
thinks
l, influoccause
ated as
preachves be
spring
y injuewspa-

CHAPTER V.

Visitation of infirmity. Go to Cheltenham. Lives of the Players.

Soon after my resignation of the editorship of the Courier, I experienced a visitation of infirmity in my health; perhaps the mind had something to do with the disease. It was of a nervous nature, but of a more decided character than several attacks I had suffered of the same kind, particularly the malady with which I was afflicted prior to going abroad in my youth. I had also experienced something like a touch of paralysis several months before; but, saving a local debility, I did not feel any particular effect; the second attack was, however, more sensibly experienced, and, though less violent, could not be shaken off. I could, indeed, no longer equivocate to myself that the noon of life was come, and the hour striking.

The consciousness of having attained the summit of my strength, was not, however, so obvious to others as to myself, and thus, though I suffered what the school-boy called an "alloverishness," I had no very particular symptom that could be described. Some relaxation was, however, recommended, of which I would have gladly availed myself; but it is not in my nature to be long at rest, for I have ever found my truest repose in a change of employment. However, I went for a short time to Cheltenham, where, though I could not deny that I received benefit, I was yet sensible that the demon of disease still clung to me—I felt his hold still, though relaxed in the grip.

In this crisis, at the suggestion of Mr. Lockhart, I undertook

the compilation of my Lives of the Players—a work which disappointed both; for although it is, probably, one of the most amusing books in the language, as affording a particular view of human nature, it owes very little to me. The humour and excentricities of the characters are either derived from themselves, or are the inventions of other biographers; except in the incidents which led the heroes and heroines to the stage, there is very little about them to excite, the reader's attention. I claim no other merit for this task, than in giving an uniformity of style to a variety of compositions.

But though, as a literary work, no great store can be set by the Lives of the Players, it deserves consideration of a particular kind. During the course of reading which the compilation required, I was struck with what may be called the key upon which it should be modulated, and it did appear to me, without affectation, that a different standard of moral-'ty should be taken with reference to the Players, from that which is applicable to other persons.

Without, therefore, assuming whether the laxity of conduct which prevails on the stage, arising from constitutional or professional causes, it is quite obvious that players ought not to be estimated by the common rules of life; to do them justice, you must proceed to consider them on a flatter key than the rest of mankind; they are necessarily under the ridge, if it may be so called, and they are unfairly treated, if this fact be not always kept in view. The half of their time is spent in an artificial state, and it is only acting justly towards them to bear this in mind. Moreover, without any disparagement of their virtue, their vocation requires them to assume sentiments and parts that may not accord with their natural feelings, but which have a certain control over those feelings, often not beneficial. To do justice to a well conceived and well expressed dramatic character, the passions or levities of that character must be put on, and cannot be exhibited with any effect, without an assumption of a probable likeness, which is never worn without communicating some taint or bias-

of the

Courier,
perhaps
was of a
a several
the mald in my
a of parebility, I
ras, howviolent,
equivothe hour

it of my o myself, an "allat could amended, is not in my truest went for not deny demon of relaxed

ndertook

no woman is improved in her heart by playing Millwood, in George Barnwell.* Although in writing the Lives of the Players, there was amusement approaching to relaxation, it yet suggested many grave reflections. Many of those kind of incidents, which, in the sober and sequestered walks of life, would scarcely deserve notice, appear, in the garish highway of the player's profession, serious and important. Occurrences, which to the commonalty of mankind, are of little account, seem, in their sphere, of primary importance. No composition with which I was ever engaged, was so pregnant with instruction, or taught the necessity of being more indulgent towards the aberrations of mankind.

But the instruction derived from either reading or compiling, which is in some sort reading, is, I apprehend, very evanescent.—The players, "amusing vagabonds," are a class of adventurers by themselves,— a relic of the influence of puritanical sentiment, makes them, in general, hardly dealt with by the world. For example, with many persons the profession is held to be disreputable; but a very little consideration should render it different, for it is not a trade. Every one cannot learn acting as he can a business. It requires natural endowment, and something of that rare quality which is described by the nubilous epithet of genius. This distinction should entitle the professors to more regard than they often receive, especially as the very faculty which distinguishes them from the common race of man, impels them to imitate, unconsciously, the foibles and the faults of others. To represent faults and foibles correctly, they must possess a shrewd discernment of them, and they are led by the insensible bias of their peculiarity, to associate themselves with characters that are not held in any particular esteem. No class in society requires to be viewed with more generosity than the players; for the very inclination which is the origin of their excellence, leads them to associate with those questionable

^{*} Mr. Galt thus virtually admits that players make themselves victims for the amusement of the public.—Are the spectators benefited in any proportionate degree by the sacrifices incurred by the actors? Edit.

wood, in
of the
ation, it
kind of
of life,
nighway
ccurrenittle acce. No
pregnant
re indul-

compilid, very e a class ience of dly dealt the proonsidera-. Every requires ty which s distinchan they tinguishimitate, Fo reprea shrewd ible bias haracters s in societhe playof their

victims for any propor

estionable

models which mankind delights to contemplate, either with laughter or sorrow; besides, be it observed, that this innate inclination, which enables them to contribute so much to our innocent pastimes, is not, in the individuals by whom it is possessed, a vice that should be very harshly condemned, as it is a gift of nature and cannot be assumed. There are, no doubt, individuals who ape the peculiarities of the players, and others who are driven to the stage by misfortune; but notwithstanding the multitude of the histrionic race, the true player is possessed of wonderful endowments, and ranks among the rare and select of the human race; the poet and the painter are not more dissimilar than the actor, and yet they are of "imagination all compact."

It would be a curious topic of research to ascertain, if it be possible, how so many of the players, both male and female. are remarkable, before they appear on the stage, for eccentricities in private life; because, in the parts which they afterwards we rea, there is nothing that seems to give any kind of warrang to previous irregularities. My own opinion on this point is, that it arises from their natural propensity to find enjoyment in strongly marked characters-characters who are so in spite, as it were, of themselves; at least, I have observed that painters have predilections for particular forms and a relish of particular phenomena beyond other men.— Musicians too, for example, do not hear common sounds better than their neighbours, and yet who would say that Paganini's ear is not a much more miraculous organ than that of the blind Highland piper, who endeavours to vend his pibrochs at a fair: yet they are precisely of the same nature and mechanism. It is for this reason that the player's power of giving appropriate gestures and expression to passion, is something of a singular faculty conferred by Heaven. But I am growing metaphysical; such eggitations are out of place in a narrative.

CHAPTER VI.

Bogle Corbet. Allusion to Sir Walter Scott. Estimate.

I no not propose in this section of my biography to give more than a sketch of the history of some of my literary productions, omitting those occasional contributions to periodical publications; but the next work to the history of the players was Bogle Corbet, suggested by my publishers to be a companion to Lawrie Todd; its fate, however, shows how little an author is capable of rightly appreciating his own works.

In Bogle Corbet, I was desirous to exhibit the causes which now, in this country, induce a genteeler class of persons to emigrate than those who may be said to have exclusively embarked before. I do not mean to say that the incidents described in that work, happen to the kind of persons in the condition of the hero, but I certainly intended to show the natural effects, in some degree, of introducing the cotton manufactures into Scotland, and the result of that kind of commerce which the late war, both in its republican and imperial stages, fostered; in this attempt I have not, in my own opinion, failed.

In one respect, Bogle Corbet is the most peculiar of all my literary essays; I had models for the principal characters in my eye, and in few have I been so uniformly successful in the portraiture. The persons in my view have been delineated with considerable truth, but not always, I suspect, with that sort of felicity, which is necessary to render a book agreeable to the general reader. The work, however, is really worth more than it seems, for it is an attempt to embody facts and observations, collected and made on actual occurrences. Canada, indeed, must have altered rapidly, if Bogle Corbet be not a true guide to settlers of his rank.

The excursion to Jamaica is entirely fictitious, with the exception of one incident which actually occurred, to a playmate of my boyhood.

In drawing up the view of West Indian society, though it is altogether a combination of the fancy, it is done with solicitude and care. It does not appear to me that there is so much difference between the notion, which one class of persons in this country entertain, of the West Indies, from those of another, that one of them should not be correct; what I consider as the true state is described in the work, but it does not tall in with the popular ideas on the subject: I shall be glad, however, should I prove wrong in my conceptions, by the result of emancipating the slaves. I say this with the more particular emphasis, as I felt it to be a kind of duty, to old associations, to point out the evils that might arise, in my opinion, from giving liberty to the slaves, without due checks and restraints.

In fact, Bogle Corbet was intended by me to be a guide book, particularly in the third volume, and I have, in all my works, kept the instructive principle more or less in view; probably by doing so, and restraining the scope of inventions entirely to probabilities, I may have failed to give as much entertainment as works, more strictly amusing with the same incidents, might have furnished, but I always did my best, and I only desire it may be remembered by my readers that, I had an object in view beyond what was apparent. I considered the novel as a vehicle of instruction, or philosophy teaching, by example, parables, in which the moral was more valuable than the incident was impressive. Indeed, it is not in this age that a man of ordinary common sense would enter into competition, in recreative stories, with a great genius who possessed the attention of all, I mean Sir Walter Scott, who, without aspiring beyond the limits of romance writing, has attained such splendid pre-eminence, by the power and variety that appear in his productions, insensibly elevating the minds of his readers with topics, which, though not historically Vol. II. O

eriodical

imate.

ve more

produc-

players companlittle an

rks. es which

rsons to lusively ents de**s**the conhow the on manummerce

il stages, n, failed. f all my acters in

essful in delineatect, with a book

er, is reembody

l occurif Bogle

correct, wear yet such an air of life and probability, as to increase the pleasures of markind.

Since I have introduced the illustrious name of that superb genius, with relation to the class of composition in which he can never be excelled, I may venture to express in what respects I not only consider him the first in his walk, but ranking with the greatest in any. As a poet, I do not think so much of him as many others do; he relates his semi-epics, certainly, with great beauty, a vivacity quite unexampled, and in many instances, he approaches that "fine frenzy" which distinguishes the genuine poet; all else that he has done, is only in respectable mediocrity; but in romance, he towers into unapproachable excellence.

Of his different novels and romances, I do not profess myself to be a proper judge; some of them I think of transcendent merit, as pictures of the manners he assumes to paint; but where the hand of the masterly artist is most conspicuously apparent and acknowledged, I have not received from the touches so much amusement, as from more seemingly careless achievements Thus it happens, that while I have always regarded the Antiquary as one of his happiest productions, to my taste, I have not been insensible to the vigour of his pencilling, in what are, perhaps, greater works. Ivanhoe I regard as his materpiece, and vet if I were required to give reasons for this preference, I would not draw them from my own feelngs, nor do I think that the talent it displays in every page can be estimated by comparison; its merits range in a supernal element, and it can only be classed, not compared, with some of the rarest efforts of the human mind. In the English language, it may be ranked with Hamlet, or the Paradise Lost, or Hudibras, or the Faery Queen, and can only be read, to be duly valued, by passages. It is, however, one of those sorts of books in which bright truths and deep insights abound and which can only be properly seen in quotations. While saving this, let me not be misunderstood; I do not mean it should be inferred that I think the least meritorious of all

as to in-

at superb which he what resput rankthink so mi-epics, pled, and y" which has done, he towers

ofess myranscendpaint; but picuously from the v careless re always ctions, to nis pencilregard as easons for own feelery page a superared, with the Eng-Paradisc y be read, of those ıts abound s. While mean it

ous of all

his novels, not immeasurably superior to those of most men; for, even where he appears to deal with matters, from which the sober reason recoils, there is about them so much necromancy of manner, that the pleasure arising from them is at once intellectual and common. No writer but himself ever made the limning of crimes beautiful, and yet withheld from that beauty the power of captivating. In this respect he excels, and in this I would say his "great strength" indisputably lies.

But Sir Walter Scott is exposed to the bane of all men of genius, in being misrepresented by an ignorant herd, who overlook his true glory. He is praised by them for his knowledge of ancient pageants and the hieroglyphics of heraldry, but there is not an Unicorn in the Lion's office who is not capable of detecting flaws and oversights, in every description of attempts of gorgeous pageantry; colours on colours, however, and such like inadvertencies, do not detract from the grandeur and poetry of his pictures: like those of the boats in Raphael's miraculous draught of fishes, we never think of dimensions in the grand effect of the whole piece.

Lord Byron says that all great authors are voluminous. This is not correct. Kings have constructed pyramids, but only one man has existed, in all time, capable of creating the Apollo. Excellence is more essential than magnitude to the greatness of genius; were it not so, in literature, facility of composition would be equivalent to elevation of talent. It is true that Voltaire and Sir Walter Scott are both distinguished, as profific authors, but there have been others equally so, and it is by the degree of excellence attained in some works, and the exhibition of capability to rise higher in others, that constitutes their pre-emineace. Unless we keep the quality of excellence constantly in view, we shall fall into a sad error by forming our estimates of authors on the quantity of their productions.

To the merits of Sir Walter Scott I have early and ever borne uniform tribute. When Marmion was published, it gave me much pleasure. In a crisis of my fortunes I read it through one night without rising, and afterwards inscribed to the author the following verses, anonymously, but which he deemed deserving of particular notice to the editor of the newspapers in which they first appeared, who gave me his letter: it was lately in the possession of Mr. Murray the bookseller.

TO THE AUTHOR OF MARMION.

ı.

On! sure when stretched on grassy knoll,
'Mid Ettrick's haunted scenery,
Watching the vassal runnells roll,
To where the restless summer; beam,
On well sung Tweed's baronial stream,
Held gay and flickering revelry;

п

Some gentle faery resting nigh Beneath her gowan canopy, Heard the entranced truant sigh, For deeds of bold and carnest toit, The borderer's joy of speed and spoil. And pomp of knightly panoply,

111.

Well pleased a child so rare to find— So meet for noble chivalry; A spell of elfin art combin'd That gave thee all thy soul desired, Whatever chief or champion fired In bless'd and blessing poesy.

When he died, no one could regret the event more, for, although I knew him but slightly, it called forth associations that were sad, though not sorrowful. The grief, indeed, which one feels when so beautiful a light is extinguished, is not felt like the pain of a misfortune; but it causes a solemn mood, and moves to reflections unassociated with any joy.

The following verses express something of what I experienced on hearing of his death.

I read it nscribed t which or of the e me his cray the

e, for, alsociations, indeed, uished, is a solemn any joy.

I experi-

THE APOTHEOSIS OF SIR WALTER SCOTT.

1.

Ho! thou upon the upland, thou
On Elidon's haunted wild on high,
What glory lights thy upward brow—
What vision draws thy wondering eye?
The snn shines clondless in the sky,
Thy forchead shews as bright as sheen,—
What pageant see'st thou passing by—
Rapt shepherd, speak! what hast thou seen?

11.

"As radiant from the north ascends
The dayless morning's mystic light,
When stars grow thin and moonlight ends,
Rise phantom forms that charm my sight,
Like fires that gleam athwart the night,
While all, as if his race were run,
Dim, shrunk, and faded, sickly white,
Sits on his throne, the dazzled sun.

111.

"There following comes, in wavering flame,
Dejected grief, and guilt sublime;
The blush that bears no tint of shame;
Th' untainting tale that tells of crime;
The seneschal of feudal time,
The crested pride of chivalry.
The facry's prank—the witches's rhyme,
The hints and gleams of prophecy.

. --

"They mount; the progeny of thought,
The minstrel grave, the goblin gay;
The ghost, of mist and moonlight wrought;
The bearded monk, the hermit gray;
And here the host, and there the fray,
As in Sir Godfrey's vision shown,
And bannered chiefs, in proud array
Refulgent, from the battle won.

v

"Lo! mingling sprites of every hue,
The maiden's dream, the widow's fright;
Green vestured elves, with eyes of dew,
And things of joy, with locks of light;
Whate'er'is fair, and good, and bright,
To universal nature true,

As heralds of immortal right,
Arise to claim the poet's due."—

VI.

Thus to my loud, impassioned call,
The raptured swain ecstatic spoke,
While dim and dark a funeral pall
Unrolling, as the silent smoke,
His high-lutranced vision broke.
And glooming o'er the Tweed below,
As lowering clouds that storms invoke,
Was seen the solemn pomp of woe.

VII.

On hill and dale, and storted moor,
Lameutings sadden all the air,
And palace dome, and cottage door,
Alike the general sorrow share:
But ah, how vain is praise or prayer,
The spell that bade the phantom rise
Is broken, their creator there—
The MASTER WIZARD—lowly lies!

These two poems, one of them written early in his career, and the other when his fame could receive no augmentation, and at the distance of five and twenty years, may serve to prove the sincerity of my high respect.

Of his general talents, the universal acclaim of the public would render any attempt to disparage them, as invidious as hopeless. He was, indeed, take him as a man and an author, one of those rare characters that are at times lent to the world as a pattern, to show how respectable human nature may become: no doubt, like all of woman born, he had his weaknesses; but when his genius, his industry, and his conduct are considered, the heart is too splendidly dazzled to discern the spots which reason asserts he must have possessed.

But although one of the richest and most abundant veins of genius well worked, enabled Sir Walter to take a most distinguished place among the illustrious, of an age teeming with great men, it has not been particularly observed that the precious ore was singularly pure of its golden kind, and unmixed with other elements. He was in the truest sense

the describer of feudal manners and customs, not as an antiquary, but as a poet. With no exception, either in prose or rhyme, he adhered to that character. In the Antiquary and Saint Ronan's Well, the peculiar spirit that was ever perched on his pen, presides with the same predominance as in Ivanhoe.

Sceptical of resolution having anything to do with the employments, to which genius addicts itself, I cannot but consider the exclusive preference which Sir Walter, throughout his mighty career, has shown for the pageants and practices of chivalry, as remarkably in accordance with his good fortune. Perhaps no other path in literature was so untrodden, and though taste more than choice may have guided him to pursue it, still the bright eminence attained in consequence, has elevated him to the admiration of posterity more conspicuously, than had he deviated into other romantic haunts or more familiar scenery.

There is, I think, a kind of inexpressible pleasure in being contemporary with great men,—to witness their dawn and enjoy their rising. Posterity can only echo the plaudits that attended their brightening, and in contemplating their noon, but not the wonder of those who traced them from the horizon.

scareer, entation, serve to

e public dious as author, t to the nature had his his cond to dissessed.

a most teeming yed that nd, and est sense

CHAPTER VII.

Reflections on my own works.

IT may be necessary to explain here, that I do not think the character of my own productions has been altogether rightly regarded.—Merely because the incidents are supposed to be fictitious, they have been all considered as novels, and yet, as such, the best of them are certainly deficient in the peculiarity of the novel. They would be more properly characterised, in several instances, as theoretical histories, than either as novels or romances. A consistent fable is as essential to a novel as a plot is to a drama, and yet those, which are deemed my best productions, are deficient in this essential ingredient. For example, in the Annals of the Parish, there is nothing that properly deserves to be regarded as a story; for the only link of cohesion, which joins the incidents together, is the mere remembrance of the supposed author, and nothing makes the work complete within itself, but the biographical recurrence upon the scene, of the same individuals. It is, in consequence, as widely different from a novel, as a novel can be from any other species of narrative. But all my works are not of this description. In two of them, particularly the Spaewife and Rothelan, I have endeavoured to write something like what I conceive an historical novel should be, namely, to make the characters act and feel as they would have done, or are supposed to have done, in their own time. But it is only by contrasting them with such works as the Annals of the Parish, that the nature of their difference can be properly understood. Many, I am very free to allow have vastly surpassed my endeavours in the historical novel, but I do not think that I have had numerous precursors, in what I would call my theoretical historics of society, limited,

though they were required by the subject, necessarily to the events of a circumscribed locality. With respect to one work, I do not think I have very great reason to be proud of its popularity, and yet I believe it has sold, particularly in Scotland, passably well. I allude to Ringan Gilhaize, which, as a work, is unique.

I have supposed a covenanter of the olden time relating the adventures of his grandfather, who lived during the Reformation. It was, therefore, necessary that I should distinctly conceive what was a covenanter's character, in order to make him relate what such a person would do with references in the time of John Knox. There was here, if I may be atlowed the expression, a transfusion of character, that could only be rightly understood, by shewing how a covenanter acted and felt. To do this,—to enable the reader to estimate the invention put forth in the work, and to judge of the manner in which the covenanter performed his task, I made him give his autobiography, which kept out of view every thing, that might recall the separate existence of the Author. But I must have failed in my object, for, although many have spoken to me of the merits of particular passages. I do not recollect that ever one person evinced an apprehension of the intention, which I thought would have attracted consideration for the work itself. Those, however, who would class it either with a common novel, or an historical novel, or with such philosophical sketches as the Annals of the Parish, must fall into an error consequent to a failure in my design, and yet I do not see in Ringan Gilhaize that I have failed It is no doubt a fiction, and as such, may, perhaps, be called a novel, but my memory does not furnish me with the knowledge of a novel of the same kind. Notwithstanding it has been supposed to have been a true history, I do not scruple to say that I have been disappointed in hearing it considered as such, because the merits of the invention have not been so obvious, merely because they have been so seemingly true.

Other productions have partaken of a similar fate; my own

hink the r rightly led to be d yet, as eculiaricterised, ither as

e deeml ingrehere is ory; for ogether, nothing raphical It is,

ial to a

a novel
all my
particuto write
ould be,
y would
n time.
as the

ence can ow have vel, but sors, in limited, situation, which made their incidents to me absolute inventions, has been overlooked, and their probability has given countenance to a belief, that I had drawn more on the memory than the imagination. But while I do think the world has not done justice to my invention, there is one of my books that has been absolutely neglected.

One of the monthly reviews, when it appeared, showed a disposition to treat it with more consideration than works of fiction usually are, in periodicals of that class. But yet it fell still-born from the press, though one or two ingenious friends have expressed themselves pleased with its speculations.—It was called the Majolo, of which the first volume appeared by itself, and subsequently the second; a third is still wanting. It is anything but a novel, and yet it has been classed as strictly of that species of composition.

It is a treatise, illustrated by incidents, on sympathies and antipathies, and that class of curious, undescribed feelings, which all men obey, but which few are willing to acknowledge. Soon after it was published, a very singular incident occurred, which ought to have rendered the book popular, had it been at all known. I speak of the manner in which the Emperor Napoleon, without witness or evidence, is said to have discovered the leader of a conspiracy. In the Majolo, it was necessary to illustrate the train of feeling by which this was done, and in the process of discovering a murder, I make the hero feel precisely what Buonaparte is reported to have felt; and yet my work was published long before the process of conjecture by which he reached the principal actor in the plot against him. But the book was sketchily written, and not brought out in a manner to attract attention. -It would be great presumption for any man to say, that his own work deserved more consideration than it received; but still I do think that the merits and originality of the sentiments, described in the Majolo, have not been adequately valued, either, for their truth, their simplicity, or the influence which they are shown to have on action.

e invenas given e memone world e of my

howed a works of yet it fell s friends ations.— appeared ill wantn classed

thies and feelings, acknowincident popular, in which , is said he Majoby which nurder, I ported to efore the cipal acily writention. that his ved; but he sentitely val-

nfluence

The Majolo is my first novel, for it was received as of that genus of composition when it appeared, and I do not think it can serve any purpose to resist the decision of the world. The first volume was published by itself, and was in fact, as I conceived, an essay, illustrated by incidents, of sympathies and antipathies, with the class of feelings associated with them: it is without story, properly so called. In my own opinion, which however goes for nothing, it is a curions work; but considered as a novel, is by far too philosophical. I was induced to add the second volume, in consequence of an opinion expressed on the first, by the late Lord Kinneder, in whose taste, with every one who knew him, I had the greatest confidence. But although there are impressive scenes and striking passages in the second volume, it is inferior in originality to the first. The work was never intended to fall into promiscuous hands; I think only two hundred and fifty copies were published. I have not one myself, or perhaps I might have, by this time, fused the two volumes into one. Obscure as it is, what attention it did attract was rather gratifying; still it was considered as a novel, and I was not willing to think it any thing less than a sort of treatise.

Connected with the train of reflections developed in the Majolo, I wrote long after a little tale, called the Omen,* which has never been ascribed to me. It was reviewed by Sir Walter Scott, in Blackwood's Magazine, in which he mentions, from his own knowledge, several facts illustrative of the doctrines, and in corroboration of incidents in the book that were pure inventions: perhaps I would be justified in calling themconclusions into which I had reasoned myself, by reflecting on the temperament of the hero, and the circumstances in which he was placed. The story itself, though interesting, is not pleasant; but it contains several passages written with more than ordinary care, and couched in a poetical freedom of style.

^{*} This work is founded on a story that I supposed Lord Byron to have had in view when he wrote the Bride of Abydos; but the Omen was not then written

CHAPTER VIII.

Continued. Annals of the Parish. Provost

WHILE I am on the subject of my literary productions, I may as well here introduce something about the history of my earlier works, although it does not fall within the scope of this undertaking to treat of them particularly.

The "Ayrshire Legatees" was published before the "Annals of the Parish," but the latter was earlier written, and the history of it is curious. When very young, I wished to write a book that would be for Scotland what the Vicar of Wakefield is for England, and early began to observe, in what respects the minister of a parish differed from the general inhabitants of the country. The study, however, was not pursued with any particular intensity, the opportunity indeed was wanting, for our town was large and the clergymen in it too urbane to furnish a model. The beau ideal of a rural pastor never presented itself to me, but I heard, from others, descriptions of the character of individuals, by which I was furnished with many hints.

One Sunday, happening to take a solitary walkto the neighbouring village of Inverkip I observed that from the time I had been there before, some progress had been made in turning it inside out. The alteration was undoubtedly a great improvement, but the place seemed to me neither so picturesque nor primitive as the old town, and I could not refrain from lamenting the change, as one sighs over the grave of an old man.

While looking at the various improvements around, my intention of writing a minister's sedate adventures returned

which Rousseau conceived his essay on the arts and sciences. I resolved to make the schoolmaster of the village the recorder of a register.

Business, with other cares and vicissitudes, suspended the design for many years, but it was constantly remembered, though not carried into effect till the year 1813, when I perceived that the plan of a schoolmaster's register would not suit, so I altered my design into the Annals of the Parish."

When the work was nearly finished, I wrote to my old acquaintance Constable, the bookseller, what I was about, but he gave me no encouragement to proceed: Scottish novels, he said, would not do, for at that time Waverley was not published, nor, if it had been, was there any resemblance between my work and that celebrated production. In consequence, however, of his letter, the unfinished manuscript was thrown into a drawer and forgotten.

Years after, I took it into my head one Sunday to set my papers in order, and among them the minister's chronicle was found; I read it over, as an entire stranger would do, and it struck me as possessed of some merit. After dinner, I read passages to a friend who dined with me, and he was equally pleased. I then sent it to Blackwood, by whom it was published.

Some of the individuals, who have been the models of the characters, were, on the publication, at once recognised, which tended to corroborate the favourable opinion I had myself formed of the work; but although the story was suggested by the improvements of Inverkip, the scene is actually laid in the "whereabouts" of the village of Dreghorn, in Ayrshire, In a still evening, I sometimes think of its beautiful church, amidst a clump of trees, with, as Roger says,

"Its taper spire that points to heaven!"

nor is the locality to me uninteresting, as it happens to be the burial place of my "forebears."

Vol II. P

ctions, I story of he scope

ne "Anten, and
vished to
Vicar of
serve, in
the genver, was
portunity
the clerideal of
ard, from
which I

e time I
in turna great
so picnot rehe grave

my inreturned The Ayrshire Legatees appeared at different times in Black-wood's Magazine, and the characters, as those in the Annals of the Parish, are portraits. Mrs. Pringle is drawn from my mother, and was recognised by herself with some surprise and good humour. Young Pringle, however, is not altogether a portrait, he is represented as a tory Scottish advocate of the ultra class, and, as such, imbued with antipathies that have their origin in political opinions: under a show of candour he has strong prejudices.

It is necessary to say this here, because it has been supposed that his letters contain my own sentiments; this, however, is not the case, for although always a moderate tory, I have never been able to discern that there was aught in political persuasions, different from my own, to justify enmity. My best friends have been whigs, and the tories I have always thought by far too intracticable—I never could discover that the bias of dispositions should be ascribed to principles. The portrait of Andrew Pringle is a composition, and I am not aware that the attributes of any one particular character predominate.

In the real characters mentioned by name, it was my endeavour to judge of them as I think an ultra tory would have judged; for my own opinion was different.

When I first saw the Sculptures upon the Parthenon at Athens, it occurred to me that it was only by studying how the forms of nature could be embodied, without losing individuality, that excellence in art could be obtained, and the result of the observation has continued with me ever since, strengthened by afterwards inspecting the Elgin marbles in London, and other works in painting and literature, esteemed master-pieces. In all, I fancied I could perceive living models to have been chosen for every figure, and I continue to think so still.

On mentioning this notion to my old friend, Mr. West, he told me that the same thing had been suggested to him in composing one of his earliest pictures in America, the Death

of Socrates, and that wherever he had attended to it, the result was eminently satisfactory, but he added, that artists could not afford to employ different models for every individual in their great works. The cripple, however, in his picture of "Christ healing the Sick" is from nature; and I recognised, in a soldier in the Life Guards coming from his painting room, the model of a figure either in "Christ Rejected" or "Death on the Pale Horse;" I forget which. But it is not for me to say that the rule is good, its appreciation is slow, and perhaps attention to the rule itself does not imply a very high sleight of art, though I think it deserving of consideration.

Another work, the Provost, intended to be a companion to the Annals of the Parish, seems to myself a superior production to the other two, although it has never been so popular.—Many circumstances, indeed, have rendered it more a pet with me, than, perhaps, it is with the public; an anecdote respecting it deserves to be noticed.

The friend to whom it was dedicated, lent it to Mr. Canning, who read it during a dull debate, no uncommon thing, in the House of Commons. Mr. Canning spoke of it afterwards always with commendation.

Besides exhibiting a tolerably correct picture of a Scottish borough, I had in view, while writing it, a gentleman, who, when he was a boy at school, had the chief management of the borough council in my native town. He was unblemished in reputation, with considerable talent for his sphere, and, it was alleged, possessed that pawkie art, in which the hero is delineated to have excelled. I left the place when about ten years old, but his peculiarities had even then struck me, and when I determined on composing a companion to the Aunals of the Parish, he seemed to have been made for me. I believed he was dead, and had no scruple about choosing him for my model.

Long after the publication, and when I had returned from my first visit to Canada, I went, accompanied by my mother

at have dour he expressed owever, I have cal per-My best thought the bias the por-

Black-

ie An-

n from

urprise

togethcate of

my enuld have

t aware

predom-

henon at ring how rindividthe reer since, arbles in esteemed ing modntinue to

West, he o him in the Death

and sister, to Ayrshire, and in passing through Irvine, it was proposed to give me the freedom of the borough, for which purpose the town council invited me to the clerk's chamber.

As we had a long journey to perform in the course of that day, I stepped out of the post-chaise, at the door of the tolbooth, to wait on the magistrates, when, to my astonishment, I beheld my old friend alive, then a very venerable man, sitting in the chair. The sight upon me for a moment was as an apparition, but I was recalled to myself by the manner in which he delivered the diploma, with an address; Provost Pawkie himself could never have said any thing half so good.

His speech partook of his character, and evinced a degree of good sense, of tact, and taste, though delivered in the Scottish dialect, quite extraordinary. Instead of speaking the sort of balderdash, common on such occasions, he passed over every thing which related to myself, conceiving, as I suppose, that the honour of bestowing on me a burgess ticket, was a sufficient recognition of my supposed deservings; but he paid a well expressed compliment to the character of my father and mother, telling how much they were held in esteem by their townsfolk, and concluded with saying, that not the least proof of their merits was in bringing up their children to be worthy of a public testimony of respect.

As in the Annals of the Parish, the narrative of the Provost is purely fictitious, and it contains few incidents belonging to the history of the town. The only occurrence approximating to the local traditions, refers to a young woman who was executed for infanticide, one Jean Swan, whose skeleton existed in my time, most fearful to children, in a doctor's shop. Over the mantel-piece, in the grammar school, was a stucco female mask, garlanded on each side with a festoon of flowers, to which her name was given by the boys. The event, however, of her execution, happened long before my time, and was the last which took place in the town.

As these three works have obtained a kind of supremacy

vine, it gh, for clerk's

e of that the tolment, I an, sitt was as manner Provost so good.

degree
he Scotthe sort
er every
ose, that
sufficient
d a well
ad mothby their
he least
ildren to

the Pros belongence approximation ose skeling a doctor school, with a the boys.

In a before town.

premacy

over my other productions, I have presumed to speak of them thus particularly, but the Earthquake was what I myself consider as my first legitimate novel. It is chiefly descriptive of Sicilian manners, and founded upon an incident, supposed to have happened, during the earthquake at Messina. I imagine the story is not very well put together, but the consistency of the characters is quite equal to those in my Scottish stories; their lineaments, however, are not so well known in this country, and the story itself is, perhaps, not pleasant: notwith-standing, it contains scenes and passages that have been thought powerful and pretty. There is one scene in it,—an old opera singer in a festa, one of the best pictures I have ever attempted, but as one swallow does not make a summer, neither will two nor three of the finest passages make a good book.

The great defect of the Earthquake, if it may so be called, is in not being English enough; all our novels of foreign countries, and particularly of those which relate to the same regions of the earth, contain laudable likenesses of characters and events that may occur or be met with in England, and have as little resemblance to the society and scenery of the lands in which they are laid, as Tom Jones, or Roderick Random, would have to those of Greece or Turkey, if the one were called Hassan Moustapha, and the other Theodosius Phragocotus. The national difference in manners seems very little understood, or, if understood, very little attended to: however, I shall not incur the derision of the reader by any longer descant. The novel did not take very well, and I pacified my vanity by supposing the readers incompetent judges of what were its merits.

CHAPTER IX.

Obligation to Mr. Blackwood. The Life of Mr. West. Origin. His lectures. Origin of the Mermaid. The Witness. A player's anecdote.

I po not intend to give an account of the origin and history of all my different works; in the prefaces to some of them I have done that already; but I owe a debt of gratitude that would be ill discharged, if it were not fully acknowledged. Although the Annals of the Parish is much older than the Ayrshire Legatees, it is due to Mr. Blackwood, of Edinburgh, to ascribe to him the peculiarities of that production, for. though unacquainted with the Annals of the Parish, his reception of my first contribution to his magazine of the Ayrshire Legatees, encouraged me to proceed with the manner in which it is composed, and thus, if there be any originality in my Scottish class of compositions, he is entitled to be considered as the first person who discovered it.

But a few particulars respecting some of these works are interesting, at least to myself, to record. The Life of Mr. West is one, for the whole materials of which it consists were derived from himself, and the work is, in consequence, as nearly as it possibly can be, an autobiography. The occasion of writing it was this.

I often used to go to the old gentleman's painting room, and, several times in the course of conversation, he mentioned anecdotes of his early youth. These seemed to me interesting, and ultimately I proposed to write the first part of his Life, to which he assented, and from time to time corrected the manuscript. The second part was undertaken at his own request, when he was on his death bed, and the last proof was examined by himself. In the course of drawing up this

part, he gave me the manuscripts of his addresses to the pupils of the Academy, works which I intend to correct, and may hereafter publish.

I ought, also, to state to what circumstances I chiefly owe the incidents, upon which some of my other productions have been founded.

In dramatic compositions, I was generally actuated by a desire to give a new view of an old well known subject; but sometimes a different motive stirred me. This was the case with the Mermaid. My friend Park had occasion to be in the Western Highlands, where he heard much, in a clergyman's family, of a mermaid that was said to have been seen on the shore of one of the Hebrides. The description, which represented her as very beautiful, struck his fancy, and he composed an address to her of four or five stanzas, which he read to me, and which supposed her, from her beauty, to have human feelings.—The verses were pretty, and led me afterwards to compose the second part of my Mermaid. The first was not written till the second was printed. He was pleased with the attempt, and wrote the critical note on it, which is in the new British Theatre.

The story of the Witness was suggested by an old newspaper or magazine, and is, undoubtedly, both original and impressive. I do not now remember it particularly, but the circumstance from which it is derived was an Irish trial for murder. The judge, as the trial proceeded, observed the accused often looking behind with terror, and becoming more and more agitated. Being a man of metaphysical discernment, he called out as if without noticing the prisoner's alarm, to make way for "that person" who was struggling to get forward through the crowd.—"By his appearance, he has," said he, "some testimony to give:" the delinquent on hearing these words, clasped his hands and exclaiming he was lost, presently "confessed his malefactions."

The other incidents are inventions to swell the fable.

est. Orhe Wit-

nistory of m I have at would ed. Althe Ayrlinburgh, tion, for, his recep-Ayrshire anner in riginality ed to be

fe of Mr. ists were uence, as the occa-

mentionto me inst part of corrected t his own ast proof g up this A distinguished actress let out a curious professional secret to me, respecting the character of Isbel. She remarked that although it was very impassioned, yet it was such from its necessary low attire, one which no lady would like to perform. I was not aware till then of the importance of confining the characters of tragedy to kings and queens, princes and princesses, and others of the blood royal, "with men of high degree."

The Entail, which is supposed to be among the best of my novels, is founded on a family anecdote related by a friend; of course the characters are selected according to my own liking, but the tale is true, and except in incidental circumstances, deserves to be considered as a kind of history in private life. The sunny summer storm and shipwreck described as consumating the fate of the last heir of entail, was introduced to allow of a description of the northern coast, which I received from Miss Sinclair, the daughter of the celebrated baronet. I never was, myself, near that part of the coast in which the scene is laid, but I have been frequently assured it is correctly given, as well as some other Highland circumstances alluded to in the book.

But of all my manifold sketches, I repine most at an alteration which I was induced, by the persuasion of a friend, to make, on the original tale of Sir Andrew Wylie: as it now stands it is more like an ordinary novel, than that which I first projected, inasmuch as, instead of giving, as intended, a view of the rise and progress of a Scotchman in London, it exhibits a beginning, a middle, and an end, according to the most approved fashion for works of that description. But no particular story is engrafted on my original idea, and perhaps, the book by the alteration is greatly improved; it is not, however, the work I had planned, in which certainly there would have been no such episode as the gipsies introduced, an episode, however, which I have heard frequently mentioned as the best contrived part of the narrative.

The second edition was inscribed to my amiable friend

onal semarked from its to perconfinprinces men of

t of my friend; my own circumin priescribed s introwhich I lebrated coast in sured it

circum-

n alteriend, to it now which I ended, a ndon, it to the ea, and l; it is ertainly

friend

troduc-

y men-

the Earl of Blessington, in consequence of a which remark his Lordship made to me when he was reading it; speaking of Lord Sandiford's character, he observed, that it must be very natural, for, in the same circumstances, he would have acted in a similar manner, and he seemed not to have the least idea, that he was himself the model of the character: perhaps I never received so pleasing a compliment. Of course the story has nothing to do with his Lordship; indeed in selecting scenes and incidents for the likenesses I endeavour to pourtray, I only aspired to make my dramatis persone speak and act after the manner of the models; just as Sir Joshua Reynolds persuaded the first Lord Duncan to stand to him as Jupiter, in the celebrated picture of Hercules strangling the serpents, which he painted for that arch-empress Catherine Il., as emblematic of the progress of civilization in the Russian empire.

Rothellan, excepting the character of Adonijah, whatever merit there may be in particular passages is not, on the whole a favourite with me, and there is less individuality about the characters, arising from having models in view, with whom I was not particularly intimate. Adonijah, the Jew, is one of the best portraits I have ever attempted; it is, however, a flattered likeness, and exhibits the particular person, for whom it was drawn, with more sensibility than he gets credit for. The historical portions of the story are taken Barnes' History of Edward III., with such inflexions, as were requisite to make them devetail with the incidents.

In hearing me thus speak, it would not be doing me justice to suppose that I am actuated with a doting fondness for my own offspring; I tell candidly what I think of them, and they are not recollected for any pleasure I had in their development. I think so little about them that I can speak of their demerits as impartially as a stranger. I should, however, make haste to conclude this desultory chapter, for if I descant much longer about my own bantlings, I shall bestow my tediousness on the reader, with as much effect as an old man fondling over his "wally draigle." At the same time, I hope

it has been plainly enough stated, that literature was with me always a subservient pursuit. But I think, on looking back, that the way in which this is sometimes said, would justify the inference that I did imagine I might have put forth better things. This is not my notion; I have uniformly, on all occasions, done my best.—The very utmost approaching to any thing like a consciousness of endowment, of which I ever thought myselt possessed, was, in believing that I sometimes enjoyed a power of combination not very common—a conceit, which led me to think many schemes practicable, which were very extravagant. This acknowledgement of being sensible of my defects, is preparatory to disclosures that, were, I likely again to enter the arena of business, I would not make, but being laid on the shelf, I may speak of them unblamed.

was with n looking id, would put forth aching to ich I ever cometimes a conceit, nich were g sensible e, I likely make, but

ned.

CHAPTER X.

Sense of disease. Abridged means of knowledge. Rise of Canadian stock. Joint stock companies. Class of persons to whom adapted. Fallacy as to interest. Their objects. The objects of commerce. Kind of superabundant population. Begin again to scheme.

During the period when literature was my sole pursuit, life passed in an easy, quiet tenor; I troubled myself very little with extraneous matters, and only studied to soften repose; not that I was more felicitous by doing so, for my natural bias to bustle and enterprise, occasionally was not repressible.

I had, however, clinging about me, as I have said, a consciousness of some occult disease that materially affected my comfort and made time pass languidly. Perhaps if in younger years this listlessness had grown into habitude, I would have felt far less tedium in my sequestration; but a very active life was so contrary to the sedate regularity I endeavoured to practice, that it made me often feel a state of mind which can only be compared to the morbid lethargy of sea sickness.

I went less frequently into general society, and, ludicrously enough, conceived that I was bound to give a preference to literary parties, to which, somehow, my mind never much lay, at least never particularly. It was not that they were disagreeable in themselves, for on the contrary they were often excellent sort of academies, and could not be frequented without receiving hints.

This abstinence in the gratification of the moral appetite, as it may be justly called, was however attended with a serious disadvantage. In the sphere of business there is great deal of floating knowledge, which drifts aimlessly about before it settles, and which gives, to those who fall in with it, an

advantage in priority of information over the recluse student. Thus it came to pass that, although studiously inclined, I was never a student, and often derived more instruction from colloquies than books. But there was too much of determination in my new mode of life to last long, and I had, constantly working against the resolution, a constitutional bias to activity that would not be restrained. I began to be "aweary" and to look about for some employment in which I could be more in earnest than with the tasks of literature.

In this state of things the affairs of the Canada Company again attracted my attention; for a long time they had been banished from my mind, and I only occasionally heard of them. But now the stock was visibly improving, and, though still at a discount, it ¹ gan to show symptoms of elasticity, recovering from depression. From that time, the quotation of the price of the shares became an object of daily attention. I watched their gradual rise with as much solicitude as if I had been a shareholder, but no idea of any project was engendered till they had reached par. I began, however, to entertain reflections respecting joint stock companies, and I fancied that I saw in them and the commercial circumstances of the kingdom, the means of advantage to individuals with small capitals, and of attaining, at the same time, important ends.

It seemed that the true nature of joint stock companies was not well understood, and that the state of the law respecting them was unwisely inimical; nor could I discern the utility of withholding charters of incorporation, save in particular cases, from them. On the contrary, it appeared, from circumstances incident to the state of society in this country, that the encouragement of joint stock companies ought to be a matter of public policy, in all cases where a large capital was required and slow returns were unavoidable; and that what was regarded as the danger of them, might be overcome by making the shares numerous, low priced, and the stock of a greater amount, than there was any probability of being wanted.

student.
clined, I
clined, I
con from
terminaad, conl bias to
"aweai I could

company ad been of them. In a still at recovering of the nation. If the as if I has engento enterind I fanctances of als with important

ompanies
v respectthe utilparticufrom circountry,
ht to be a
pital was
hat what
rcome by
stock of a
of being

Upon these principles, the most ebvious mode of proceeding was not to address joint stock projects so much to the consideration of rich capitalists, as to the members of that class who have small savings, upon which they are not dependent, and can afford to wait with only moderate interest till returns come round.

It was not, however, seemingly consistent with mercantile economics, that interest should be paid from the capital; but, on reflection, I thought some fallacy existed in this, and that the objection would be removed, if the interest were made part of the necessary capital; not the nominal capital or the subscription raised to cover all contingencies. but that capital which was calculated for the objects of the undertaking, and which should be the amount to be set against the returns of the scheme.

Having arrived at this conclusion, it was obviously apparent that joint stock objects were necessarily very limited in their number, must be simple in their nature, and not likely to be so speedy in their fruitage as to tempt the cupidity of rich men. Banking establishments were, undoubtedly, according to Adam Smith and all who thought on the subject, legitimate joint stock speculations; so were canals and the improvement of waste lands, in fact, every thing, where a great deal of money was requisite, and the returns of the nature of annuities; the recovery of the money embarked in them being only attainable by the sale of the shares. Mining adventures, and all speculations, the success of which depends on chance, seemed to me of the nature of gambling associations, and were net fit objects of chartered protection.

When I had brought my mind to understand that the objects of commerce might be divided into three classes, namely, first, those which could be grasped by individuals or private copartners, second, those which, too great for either, might be accomplished by joint stock companies, and third, those which involved such hazard as only the prudence of those who embarked in them could estimate; I came to the conclusion, Vol. II. Q.

af er considering different schemes which occurred to me, that the joint stock department, notwithstanding what I had sufered, was still open to me, and that of all feasible plans the most obvious were land speculations in new countries, to which swarms of the over-peopled nations of Europe might be led.

In saying this, it is necessary to be guarded, that I may not be misunderstood; I mean over-peopled in their existing circumstances, not as to the capability of their soil to maintain a greater number. I was, indeed, averse to think that the goodly frame of the old continent should be broken up, while thewild regions of the new could receive all the superabundance of population. I shrunk from the contemplation of converting the magnificence of aristocracy into common household purposes, while, in the lonely domains of America, there was room enough, without revolutionary turbulence or crime, for all the industrious who could no longer exercise their vocations in the land of their fathers; and my thoughts again began to germinate with projects which had that intent for their scope and aim.

But I was aware that the world had suffered a great change since the formation of the Canada Company, and my sojourn in the wilderness, with the seclusion into which I had retired, did not qualify me to form an estimate of the state of things. Still I was convinced that, if I could bring forward a rational scheme, there were both mercenary and benevolent persons enough in the community of this country to support it, though I knew not where to look for them.

In this crisis, the stock of the Canada Company rose to par, and I saw that I might again go among my old friends, vithout blushing for an undertaking, the solidity of which experience had now vindicated. At this same time, I was informed that a joint stock company, on as great a scale as the Canada Company and on the same principles, was forming at Liverpool, with the intention of making New Brunswick the scene of its operations.

I literally lost not an hour, after receiving this intelligence, till I ascertained if Mr. Ellice was disposed to sell his superb seigniory of about three hundred and fifty thousand acres, in Lower Canada, situated at the confluence of the St. Lawrence and the Ottowa; and his answer emboldened meto try if a company could be formed, taking this noble domain for the nucleus of its purchase. I then waited on Lord Howick, and learnt from his Lordship two essential particulars; namely, that the Government did not recognize the right to the territories advanced by the claimant to the earldom of Stirling, and that an association intending to purchase the crown lands in the American provinces, might be again treated with.

When I had ascertained these two important facts, I began to cast about me for supporters to my scheme, and it is needless to say that such an enterprise requires no little bravery. The establishment, indeed, of a joint stock company, illustrates the problem of Columbus with the egg; for though it seems an easy task when completed, yet it is, in the advent most adventurous, especially to those who, like me, have been mortified in similar undertakings.

that I
eir exsoil to
think
broken
the suemplato comains of
ry turlonger
and my
the had

, that

l suf-

is the

es, to

might

change sojourn id retirstate of orward a nevolent apport it,

e to par,
vithout
perience
med that
Canada
t Liverhe scene

CHAPTER XI.

Relax in literary pursuits. Works. Of the Member and Radical. Dedication of the latter.

From the moment that I had again found a fulcrum I relaxed in my literary pursuits. I did not however, abandon them; indeed, how could I? and Stanley Buxton and Eben Erskine were the works produced. I had almost forgot the Member and the Radical, two occasional productions, and which, to get ridof, I may at once notice here.

They were undertaken at the time when all the nation were afflicted, not only with the reform mania, but when the public seemed to forget that the first covenant of the social compact, was the surrender of certain natural rights for the privileges and protection of society.

In the Member, I tried to embody all that could, in my opinion, be urged against the tories of my own way of thinking, and I was not aware that it could be deemed very bad, till I saw my friend, Dr. Bowring's account of it, in the Westminster Review, in which he considered it as a reluctant concession to the spirit of the times. I am sure, however, that Mr. Jobbry is not made to make any acknowledgement unbecoming an honest man of the world, nor such as a fair partizan may not avow. The gentleman I had in my view as the model, was immediately discovered in the House of Commons, and I suspect he is possessed of too much shrewd humour to be offended with the liberty I have taken. I have represented him as neither saying nor doing aught, that, I think, as the world wags, he may not unblushingly have done, nor which, in my heart, I do not approve.

Long ago I had meditated to write the Member, so that it was not altogether ephemeral for the time. The dedica-

tion to Mr. Holmes, which he good humouredly laughed at on the publication of the book, was written by Mr. Lockhart, and to me it has always appeared a clever jeu d'esprit, and so admirable with the keeping of the character, that I feel proud when it is ascribed to me.

The Radical is more philosophical in the satire; my object in it was to show that many of those institutes, which we regard as essentials in society, owe their origin to the sacrifices required to be made by man, to partake of its securities. But I imagine it was not palatably written to the times, for, although conscious myself of not having failed in the composition, it has not been popular; possibly as self-love would say, this is in consequence of its manifestation of the truth; however, it has not been successful.

An anecdote of the dedication is worth preserving. I had occasion to be at the Colonial Office on the morning, when the present ministry tendered their resignation, and the business was therefore postponed; for Lord Howick, who had just been informed of the news, told me of their resignation. On leaving the office, I had occasion to call at my printer's, and, in the whim of the moment, inscribed the book to Lord Brougham, designating him late chancellor, before it could be known to the public that he had resigned.

But to resume my narrative; when I saw myself in possession of enough to justify me in the attempt to form another company, and had sounded gentlemen as to their aid in the undertaking, I was perplexed by finding that several of them were previously pledged to be directors of the New Brunswick Company. It is not every one in London, who, however eligible by his circumstances, is fit to be a director where money is to be raised, by an appeal to the public. But it is more difficult to find individuals willing to act, who, when the capital is obtained, have influence sufficient in their names, to give confidence in their judgment to emigrants. Thus, in the very vestibule of the undertaking, I found myself environed with obstacles; obliged to surrender a part of my project,

er and

relaxed them; Erskine Member , to get

nation hen the e social for the

ny opinninking, nad,till I

Westant conver, that at unbeir partiv as the of Comwd huten. I ht, that,

so that

and, upon advice, to try if I could blend my colonial scheme with that forming at Liverpool, for New Brunswick.

Accordingly, I put myself into communicaion with the projectors of that undertaking, but I was surprised to find their scheme very raw, not half so far advanced as my own, and the preliminances were yet to be established before subscriptions could be asked. I went with their deputation to the secretary of state, but the interview was unsatisfactory. There seemed to be no definite plan formed, and, from that day, I resolved to proceed independently of them. Accordingly, I took my own course, and resolved to form a provisional committee of gentlemen, who would afterwards agree to act as directors.

In this I was again driven from my purpose. I could find no monied house to do as Messrs. Hullet Brothers and Co. had done in the Canada Company; yet still I saw symptoms sufficiently encouraging to entice me on. But, reluctantly, I was obliged to consent to call a public meeting, in order to make the formation of the company originate with a committee, to be appointed from the gentlemen present: thus conniving in a mode of proceeding which took the initiatory of all proceedings out of my own hands.—However, it was only by submitting to this arrangement that I could hope to succeed, and I therefore yielded to the necessity.

After some requisite preparations, the company was duly formed—directors were appointed, by whom I was unanimously elected provisional secretary, but, from the causes which I have stated, I soon felt myself more subordinate than if the plan of the company had been formed in private, under the auspices of a house by whom it could be recommended. Indeed, in no case whatever do I think any plan can be so well formed by a board, as by an individual offering a specific scheme for consideration. The result of the wisdom of several exercised over the details of a specific plan is always preferable, when it can be obtained, to any plan formed by the same collective talent.

cheme

e prod their
nd the
iptions
cretary
eemed
lved to
ok my
ttee of

ors.

ld find
co. had
s suffi, I was
o make
e, to be
g in a
edings
nitting
there-

hich I
if the
ler the
l. Inso well
cheme
l exererable,
he col-

duly

imous-

CHAPTER XII.

Schemes and projects.

But of all projects of a great kind, after the colonial plans, was one which is so feasible, that I feel myself almost blameable for not setting seriously about the promulgation. A plan for making, at comparatively, a small expense, the city of Glasgow a sea-port.

I have frequently mentioned the idea of rendering the river Clyde navigable, by damming above the bridges, but this magnificent scheme, as it may be called, has never been explained, lest it should be undervalued. It occurred to me, or rather, was confirmed to me, by the plan of the wet docks at Bristol.

It is to dam the river across, at a short distance below the entrance to the Forth and Clyde canal, and to make Bowling Bay a harbour. By this plan, the river above would be as one vast wet dock to the Bromielaw at Glasgow; the navigation in it would be uninterrupted without being affected by any tide, and even by Inchennun there might be a water intercourse established with Paisley. To these who know the localities, the amazing advantages of the dam proposed will at once be recognised.

The manner in which this great project may be carried into effect, is not the least of its merits.

My notion is, that somewhere at the spot pointed out, a dam should be constructed with a side outlet* for the river,

^{*} The term "outlet" is used here merely to remind the reader, if he has observed the works at Bristol, of the means of carrying off the river; but my project is to make the dam a location for mills, and to carry off the water in separate channels, by which, I concelve, a power for driving machinery would be obtained, at least equal to all the steam engines in Glasgow. The very saving in fuel would be to an inconceivable extent. I have not examined

and locked down from the dammed up waters, to the harbour in Bowling Bay. This is all that is requisite, and the mode of doing it is equally simple.

When on the great breakwater at Plymouth, I thought I could discern a mode of river dams, that might be cheaply attempted. I would have the dam proposed, to cross the Clyde at Bowling Bay, formed of two parallel mounds, in order that the space between them might be filled with earth, and puddled, to prevent leakage. The walls of the dams I would have of stones, loosely shot, like those of the breakwater, but, not having the sea to resist, they would not require to be so large; abundant materials are close at hand, I need only mention Dunbuck hill.

The locks, communicating with the tide harbour, should be formed of iron plates, and should at least be two; one for outward, and the other for inward bound vessels. Whatever more this superb convenience would require, in the shape of wharfs and warehouses, could be gradually supplied.

In contemplating this improvement, I was necessarily led to think of the means by which it might be accomplished, and these seemed as accessible, if I may so speak, as the materials

The common way for raising the capital to execute docks and canals is, by levying a tonnage for income,—a duty on vessels using the wet dock or canal—but I would not have recourse to a tonnage duty alone, I would levy a tax on the rental of all Glasgow. It would require only to be a small rate, and as all the city and land, especially on the banks of the river, would partake of the benefits, it could not be objected to. I wish my friends in Glasgow would think seriously of this project; it is no idle dream, nor formed without serious cogitation: lame as I am, I would undertake the superintendence, and surprise them with the moderation of the cost, finishing it in a summer.

the Irwall at Manchester, but I will, if ever there again. The Liffey, at Dublin, is very manageable. Indeed, my idea is adapted to all streams, for wherever there is a running water, there is a power, a true perpetual motion, for every thing, even to the kindling of a fire.

harbour mode of

cheaply ross the bunds, in led with s of the e of the ould not at hand,

r, should ; one for Vl.atever shape of

ly led to iplished, he mate-

te docks
duty on
out have
x on the
a small
banks of
e objecteriously
out seris superthe cost,

Liffey, at reams, for al motion, The mode of providing the means of accomplishing this undertaking, gave rise to an idea that almost deserves to be considered as of national importance. It seems to me that there is some great error now, in making those using the high-roads, support them. The whole realm is benefited by these roads, and it is not a wise policy to tax only the traffic and travelling upon them, by the tolls, for the maintenance. It appears to me, that it would be more just to impose a general tax on the whole kingdom, and remove the turn pikes entirely. The amount of the tax requisite could be easily ascertained, and local boards might be appointed, in place of the existing trustees.*

I have not, however, enumerated all my notions, nor disclosed the half of my projects.

Among others, under the old royal right to treasure trove, a measure of some fiscal importance. I have thought, might be formed. It is well known, for example, that by prescription many debtors acquire, permanently, unclaimed debts, and that numerous balances, to a great amount, remain long forgotten, almost unknown, by legatees, in the hands of merchants and bankers, and individuals. I would have these monies annually collected and paid into an office, which should pay them over, after an additional period, to the state.

This notion has long been a favourite, for although it might be attended with difficulties, I can discern none that may not be overcome. I spoke of it one day, incidentally, to the Earl of Ripou, when he was Chancellor of the Exchequer, but my own affairs, since that time, have left me no leisure to follow it up. The attempt, however, to carry it into effect, might raise a sad outcry with many at first.

Connected with the inquiries to which the idea of govern-

^{*} The annual expense of the roads is estimated at about £1,500,000, supported by the tolls; instead of which, I would propose an addition, to what is at present paid, in taxes on commodities most generally in use. The money is paid by the nation, and to the nation at large it should not make any difference. It would be an advantage by a lax, for it would save the expense of toll houses, &c.

ment, asserting its prerogative over unclaimed debts, gave rise, I was induced to consider the loose state of the usage with respect to mercantile copartners; and I thought it admitted of an easy improvement, which I offered to carry into effect, many years ago without any expense to government; namely, by requiring all-copartners to register themselves, and to publish, annually, a red book of the partners in each concern. In numerous firms, there are sleeping partners and quiescent sharers of profit, not easily attainable by creditors. I proposed to employ the post-masters, in each district, to keep the registers, and to transmit periodical returns to central offices in each of the three capitals, London, Dublin, and Edinburgh. The plan is somewhere among my papers.

When the public humanity was outraged by the numerous prosecutions for forgeries, some years ago, on the small notes of the Bank of England, I was led to consider the subject.

It seemed to me that the bank, artists, and ingenious men, who engaged in the research to discover the desideratum, were on a wrong scent. That the case was one which did not admit of a perfect remedy, but only of an approximation. Years, however, passed before I was satisfied with my own plan. Indeed, it was not until the Canada Company was established, that it was brought into any thing like a practical form.

What one man can do, I am certain an other can imitate, and accordingly concluded that the utmost approximation which could be made, was by the excellence of the art exhibited, and the number of different artists employed. Upon this principle I formed, for the Canada Company, a note for monies, to be deposited in London, negociable in America.

The paper was made with the utmost skill, letter press, copper-plate, and wood engraving were combined; I intended to add lithography and cross-hatching.* but, being obliged to go

^{*} I must suppose this art is now very little known. I have never seen a specimen of the present age, but I am acquainted with it.

usage
tit adrry inovernthemartners
leeping
attainaers, in
periodapitals,
ewhere

merous small he sub-

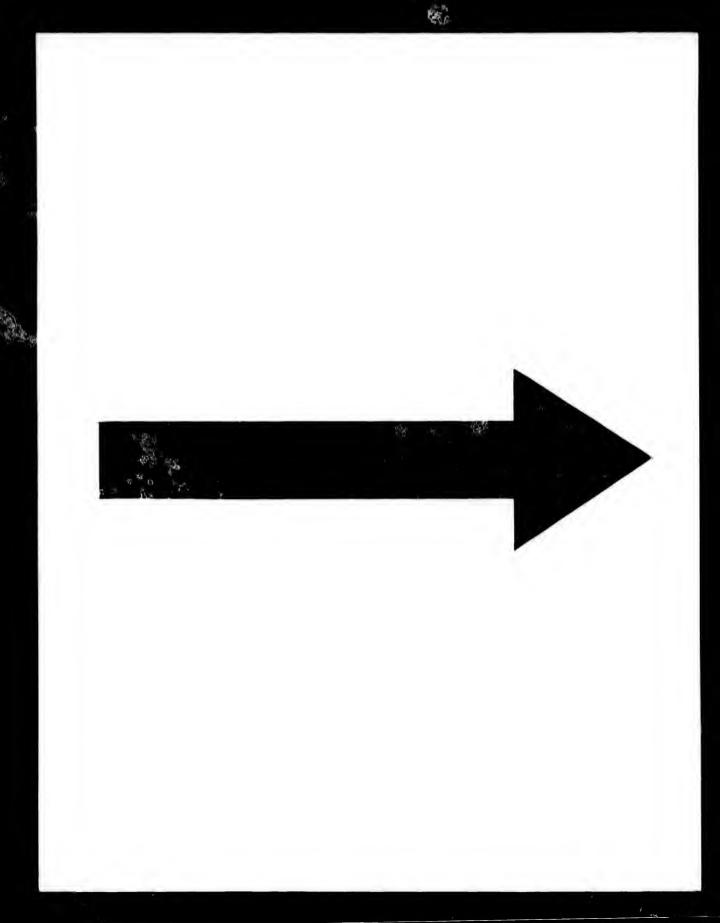
genious esideratwhich roximawith my company a prac-

imitate, iniation of exhibpon this br monca.

ess, copntended ged to go

er seen a

abroad while the note was in process, it was never finished as intended, though it has been issued. Lately I have given the specimen to my friend, Mr. Martin, to add line engraving and mezzotinto to the other arts enumerated, which will produce a note that will be extremely difficult, even for two or three superior artists, to imitate, yet at once recognisable by its peculiarities, thereby rendering the forgery palpablé. Possibly I may hereafter show the note to some of the Bank Directors, for now, when it is so well understood that paper money must be common in so extensive a commercial country, and in which, and in its dependencies, the circulation of bank paper must more and more prevail, a matter of this sort is of vast importance. What we call money, is but the representation of portions of property, and it now no longer admits of question, that, except in the change requisite for small dealings, money, notwithstanding all the balderdash of bullion committees, must take, for general transactions, the form of orders on paper, or notes, or bills of exchange.



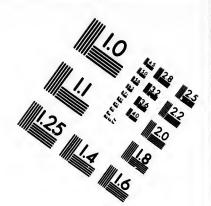
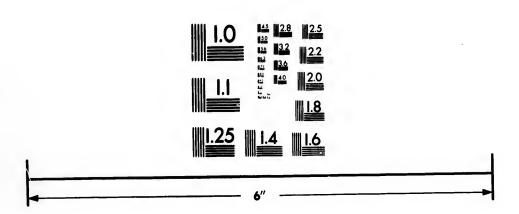
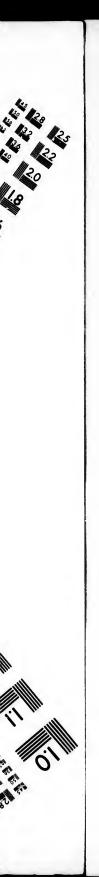


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation 23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580

(716) 872-4503



CHAPTER XIII.

Tontines. Plan of emancipation for the slaves. Scheme of colonial currency. Legislative reform.

SINCE I became acquainted with the tontine principle of raising capital, it has always occurred to me, that it was more applicable to national transactions, than those comparatively small public undertakings, for which it is commonly resorted to, and in a jocular scheme for paying off the national debt by it, in the course of one hundred years, without imposing any burthen on the country, a serious idea occurred to me.

In public works, such as canals, docks, and things of that sort, from which the returns are slow, and sometimes problematical, and for which the capital money requisite is raised by shares, I imagined, that were it raised on tontine principles, through the medium of government, a public beneficial result would accrue; thus,

When a canal is projected, the plan should be submitted to government, and when approved, and the estimate of cost sanctioned, an annual sum should then be appropriated by the state, and onthis annual sum, from the very first, the capital required should be raised by way of tontine.

Suppose a canal is to be undertaken, which shall cost five hundred thousand pounds, government might, I conceive, set apart from the public revenue an annual sum, which should be less than the legal interest of the capital, and a sum, say fifty thousand pounds, as a reversionary sum, to be divided at a fixed period among the then survivors of the shareholders, and employ in the execution, optionally, the soldiers of the standing army, with additional pay.

The effect of such an arrangement would, I conceive, be;—
First. The amount at which the work was estimated would come into the hands of government from the shareholders.

Second. The shareholders would at once receive the interest on their advance, which, though lower than the legal rate, would be compensated by the chance of participating in the reversionary sum.

Third. The employment of the soldiers on the works at a small additional pay, would, especially in a time of peace, be highly advantageous; and,

Fourth. The dues to be collected when the work should be finished, would be an addition to the public revenue.

It is not for me to offer any argument here in favour of notions like these; they are only stated as illustrative of the author's turn of mind, and partly as hints for others to examine. To proceed, however, with my ideas.

From early associations I was induced to take a particular interest in the West Indian slave question, arguing the necessity of making some provision for the negroes before emancipation, and claiming for the planters compensation for depriving them of their property. The abolition of slavery I never thought could be a question, the justice of the measure was indisputable, and I have said very little upon that point, considering the whole objection to be comprehended in the two points just stated.

Government have now settled all debate respecting the question of emancipation. It is, however, with no arrogance that I venture to state here a project for emancipation, which has been partly published; viz., to divide the field negroes from those of the boiling-house, and to consider the former as a peasantry, and the latter as manufacturers; the one subsisting by the fruits of their own labour, and the other on wages derived from the proprietors of the boiling houses.

This division has the advantage of at once providing for all the boiling-house or manufacturing negroes, in the simplest Vol. II. R

me of

of raismore
rativealy reational
out imred to

of that probleraised princibene-

of cost ated by the cap-

bst five ive, set ould be ay fifty d at a ers, and e stand-

way possible, leaving only the field negroes as objects of attention, and as it has not yet been imagined to give the field negroes the estates of their masters, I suppose a rent might be raised from the land; I would, therefore, propose, that the estates should be subdivided into farms, and let for rents payable either in money or produce.

The proprietors of the boiling-houses would thus become the purchasers of the field negroes' crops, and thereby approximate their condition to that of the emancipated serfs of Russia.

It was not merely, however to thinking thoughts, which might be considered as the nebulæ of schemes, that I was so much addicted I often wrote out my projects at great length, and endeavoured to explain how they might be carried into effect, performing, in some sort, what the Marquis of Worcester formerly did for his inventions, but in a much more minute and practical manner. As an instance, I give in the Appendix a project for placing the colonial currency, and the medium of remittances, on a better footing than at present I have only inserted it to illustrate my custom, and because it was the first speculative paper printed at Guelph, where I early encouraged a printing press to be established.

This practice of committing the outlines of my schemes to paper, and considering them from time to time, began so early with me, that I have no remembrance of its commencement; but one of the first germs, in this shape, was made of legislative reform, which I shall quote, not for its merits, but as a cub licked into as much form as its nature could well endure.

My tory notions rejected all transformations. It seemed, almost innately to me, that the natural order of things was not to abrogate or abolish existing systems, but only to foster the growth, if the expression may be used, of tendencies, and accordingly I came, when young, to the conclusion, that the possession of wealth was, in the British constitution, the criterion of ability and understanding.

When I made this induction, it seemed to me, that since

the latest modification of our governmental institutions was established, there had been a vast accumulation of national wealth, which was totally without political weight; it had no representation, was affected by proceedings over which it had no controul, and that the reform wanted, was to let this wealth have its natural influence.

The enumeration of the things in which it consisted, were, property in canals and docks, and all public works of a joint stock nature; machines and factories, the shipping, the capital in trade, the public stocks, &c., in fact, all that species of property detached from the soil. The time I regarded as gone by, in which the soil was the only property that should be represented. To be sure, the skill possessed by burgesses was deemed equivalent to property, but the wealth which originated in that skill was nugatory.

Whether, in this view, I was right or wrong, would be of no use now to ascertain, but on this fulcrum I proposed to raise my lever of reformation, and the scheme was simply this:

It was only to authorise the sheriffs of counties to issue, at a fixed rate, charters, to exercise the elective franchise, similar to the certificates issued in London when livery is taken up making the privilege wholly optional, but accessible in every shire, to give a vote at the election of the members.

Besides extending political influence to the possessors of property who had none, a revenue might be obtained to the state, from the price chargeable on granting the charters.

This plan of parliamentary reform, is less operose than that which has been adopted.—However, it becomes not me to say so; though, of course I am privileged, like the crow, to hink my own bird the whitest.

ome the approxiserfs of

, which

of at-

e field

night be

the es-

s paya-

was so length, ded into of Worch more e in the and the present I cause it

ere I ear-

nemes to n so earncement;
egislative
us a cub
lure.

emed, alwas not
to foster
ncies, and
that the
, the cri-

hat since

CHAPTER XIV.

A constellation and a planet.

An autobiography is sufficiently egotistical, without seeking for occasions to speak of one's self relative to encounters with eminent persons; besides, it is not pleasant to survivors to hear deceased friends familiarly spoken of, nor to living characters to find themselves introduced into any book, merely because they accidentally have happened to be in company with the author. Perhaps these pages lose in attraction by my acute sense of this truth, but there are a few occasions on which, I may be pardoned for thinking, the rule will admit of legitimate exceptions.

One particular manifestation of stars rose negative in my horoscope.

The Earl of Blessington had often intellectual parties, selected with solicitude, at his table, and, one day, the Countess resolved to have, for friends.

"A feast of reason and a flow of soul!"

for which purpose some of the most brilliant orbs of London were brought into conjunction. Her ladyship, in asking me to be a gazer, told me what phenomena would shine out, assuring me that many a day might come to pass before the cycle of such another meeting would come round, nor, indeed, was it possible to conceive that so many accomplished characters could be assembled, some of them greatly distinguished for their conversational brilliancy, without eliciting sparkles and scintillations worthy of being ever held in remembrance. Alas! empty, as musty filberts, are all earthly expectations! It proved one of the dullest congregations, that ever sat making long faces together in a conventicle.

When the company adjourned to the drawing-rooms the as-

pect of things rather improved, and the dread of one another, to which, no doubt, the dullness of the dinner-table may be ascribed, was lessened by the scattering, and by others coming in,—but a more complete failure cannot be imagined; in all social ease, it was below a very common party; nevertheless to me one incident was memorable.

I was standing near a window, in one of the back drawing-rooms, when Earl Grey and Mr. Cannang did me the honour of addressing me. From the place in which I stood, there was no moving, nor was I much inclined, for, after a short conversation, they began to converse together, and I became interested. The opportunity of comparing two such eminent men, was too precious to be neglected.

Whether owing to the impressions left on me by "the dirgie" of the game in the dining-room, or really to some greater dignity of manner, I shall not attempt to determine, but Earl Grey, both in colloquial taste and expression, seemed decidedly the superior.—His remarks were not less neatly and simply made, but there was a sustained aristocracy about him exceedingly characteristic, and, I should think, from the tones of his voice, and his general deportment, he must have been very pleasing to those with whom he was intimate.

Mr. Canning had more of the House of Commons about him, with something like pertinacity, especially when there was any difference in opinion between them, and the conversation, happily, was apt to bring out peculiarities of that kind; indeed he differed with his noble antagonist, I thought, as briskly as if they had been discussing the previous question elsewhere; but the matter in question was no less debateable.

At Earl Grey's elbow stood a beautiful marble statue of a female in fashionable nudity, and their debate arose, from observing her feet, respecting the point of beauty in the female foot; his Lordship maintaining that it consisted in a certain smoothness of fleshy fullness, Canning thought the reverse, and finding themselves as little like to agree as on a matter of the status ante bellum, Sir Thomas Lawrence, who was R 2*

eeking s with yors to g charmerely mpany

ion by

ions on

dmit of

in my

s, selecountess

Londong me to t, assuthe cynor, inpolished distineliciting

the as-

remem-

hly ex-

ns, that

of the party, was appealed to. He, of course, sided with the Earl, but Canning was not satisfied, and continued the controversy. Sir Thomas, as all the world knows, was a very saponaceous character, but, I suspect, not possessed of the most mellifluous spirit. Being pricked by the pugnacity of Canning, he said, that if there were no other way of convincing him, he would call in the Countess, and ask her to show her foot. "Ah!" replied Canning; "if you will do that, I'll say black is white, and give in."

Eaves-dropping was, on this occasion, very pardonable.— Two of the first rival orators of any age disputing about a point of beauty, and refering to the most graceful artist then in the world! Besides, three such heads together, so superior, so alike, and yet so different! Verily, the craniologists may know a skull from a turnip after all that Christopher North has said.

Among other distinguished acquaintances made at the Earl of Blessington's, I recollect, with particular pleasure, that of the celebrated Dr. Parr. Not only because there was much about his character, according to my own heart, but from an odd circumstance attending the commencement of our intimacy. The Countess mentioned, one day, that he was to dine with her the next, and asked me to meet him, adding when I had accepted the invitation, that "as the doctor always dined early, to come an hour, at least, sooner than usual."

In going to St. James' Square, both she and the Earl were from home, and the learned doctor was sitting alone in full canonicals, when I was shewn into the library.

Being thus tete-a-tete, we fell into conversation, and, gradually thawing towards each other, at last became quite fluent, till his racy laugh and grotesque elaboration of phraseolgy tinted, with a lisp, made us, long before the rest of the company came, cordial friends. I do not remember what passed, it was probably not remarkable, but he gave me a descriptive account of a visit he had paid to Edinburg, full of curious caricature and strangely assorted images. Ah, my poor Athens, thy swans are all geese!

It was impossible, notwithstanding the droll originality of his convery tation about him, which habit had made to sit so easy as to be almost equal to innate eccentricity. Soon after, next day or so, he called on me, and this voluntary overture to friendship, from such an eruditical personage, I have always considered as an honour.

Many this friend, of Dr. Parr have described his peculiariant.

Many able friend of Dr. Parr have described his peculiarities, and that apparent disregard of etiquette, which he whimsically practised to attract notice; but there was in his character a fund of good nature, which often called forth feelings at once of regard and kindly ridicule, that few could relish more than himself. On that evening he had his pipe brought in, as usual, after dinner; and the servants, not being accustomed to such a ceremony in the house had neglected to provide him with a basin. The doctor, however, merely noticing the omission, rose, and going to the sideboard, which was gorgeously ornamented with gold and silver vessels, brought away a golden chalice, and placing it at his feet, found, till a basin was brought, that it answered the purpose equally well,

bout a
st then
supeaniolostopher
he Earl

s much rom an intimato dine g when always ial."

rl were in full

d, gradite fluhraseolt of the hat pasne a deill of cumy poor

CHAPTER XV.

Origin of the interview between Sir Andrew Wylie and King George the Third; with anecdotes of other members of the royal family.

At the suggestion of a friend, I am induced to mention several accidental circumstances, which he thinks will be amusing to my readers, particularly to give an explanation of the origin of the interview, in Windsor Park, between Sir Andrew Wylie and George the Third. He informs me, that it is considered as the transcript of a real occurrence, and that I am supposed to have had, myself, a meeting with his majesty similar to the scene described; otherwise, it is thought, his familiar manner could not have been so represented.

The supposition is not correct in fact, but the impression which I entertain of two droll incidents with the "half gilly, half gutchard,"* old king, has contributed to the force of the picture. Some eight and twenty years ago, my friends, Park and Spence, were in London, and I went with them to see Windsor Castle. Wyatt's great staircase was then nearly finished, but the interior scaffolding was not all removed. In looking at the construction, I got up the main flight of steps, and was gazing about, when the king was announced. Before I could get down, his majesty, with the architect, came in, and I was obliged, in consequence, to remain for some time standing where I was.

The king observed us, particularly myself, who was so conspicuous, and lingered with Mr. Wyatt, until he had satisfied his curiosity by looking at us; speaking all the time, "his tongue never lay," and looking about as he was speaking.

^{* &}quot;The gutchard loads the gilly's arm, The bairn the mither's breast."

It was evident that he spoke more at random than seriously addressed the architect, being occupied in noticing us. Some thing in his manner drew my attention, and from that interview, which lasted probably several minutes, I caught a durable remembrance of his peculiarities. I see him still.

The other occasion was still more characteristic of the good intentioned venerable man. It was on the morning of that day, on which he dissolved the parliament of the whig administration, formed after the death of Mr. Pitt. I happened to be with a friend, at morning prayers, in the oriel chapel of the Castle. The king was there, and the late princess Amelia, with a few attendants, besides the gentlemen of the chapelry; in all, about twenty persons. It was a sight worthy of remembrance. The old man remained seated, with an humble worshipping demeanour, while the prayer for the king was said, but he stood up, and repeated aloud, with pathos, the petition for the people.

With this really touching solemnity, all gravity, however, fled from me. It is well known, that his majesty was very near-sighted, a defect which caused him to hold the prayer-book close to his face: over the top of the leaves, with the sly simplicity of an urchin at school, he frequently took a peep at us, but whenever he caught my eye, cowered, as it were, down afraid, and "conned his task" in the most exemplary manner. The way he did this was exceedingly amusing; but the worst of it was, that I could not conceal the effect, and accordingly "I and the king" continued to play at bo-peep during all the remainder of the service.

To these two incidents, as they may be called, I owe those particular traits of individuality which have been embodied in the scene with Sir Andrew Wylie! and which, I must believe, are not unlike. I know, from good authority, that George the Fourth remarked, in reading the description, it was "by far the likest portrait of his majesty he had ever seen."

It often struck me, that the late Duke of Kent had much

King rs of

amuf the Anthat and

sev-

th his

ession gilly, of the Park o sec nearnoved. ht of anced.

o contisfied

iking.

itect.

in for

of his father's manner. I was, for many years immediately preceding his death, honoured with his royal highness's condescension, and I have still, among my papers, several curious documents which he gave to me, illustrative of domestic matters in the royal family. The occasion was this: circumstances, which need not be explained, led him to incur debts, and he was advised, I think foolishly, to apply to parliament to discharge them. He mentioned the circumstance to me, and I took the liberty of at once condemning the advice. From less to more, he mentioned it had been suggested to him that he had a legal claim. This I knew he had not; and sensible, that an application on such a ground might lead to unpleasant discussions, I recommended him to consult competent legal advisers.

His Royal Highness, knowing that I was acquainted with Sir Archibald Macdonald, who had been Chief Baron, put the papers into my custody, to show to him, and requested me to sound him on the subject. Sir Archibald, at once, pronounced the same opinion that I had done, and went immediately to Sir William Grant, the eminent Master of the Rolls, who also concurred, and strongly deprecated any sort of public proceeding. I reported progress, and, in the end, the Duke did not apply for public money, though he conferred on the subject with different influential gentlemen.

Among these papers, was a long well written letter, by the Duke himself, to his brother the Prince Regent, noticing some of the circumstances alluded to. His Royal Highness sent a groom to me for the copy of this letter, before five o'clock in the morning, on the day he left London for the last time, when he went to the west of England: the other papers he allowed to remain.

By the way, to his untimously sending of the groom, "thereby hangs a tale," which should be told as an anecdote of that singular good nature, which is peculiar to the members of the royal family.

His Royal Highness was in the practice of commanding me

to come to him, often at times very inconvenient; frequently, between five and six o'clock, which was my dinner hour. This had occurred more than once; and one day, when I was engaged to a particular party, it so vexed me, that without once, in my fit of self-absorption, thinking of his rank, I resolved to have an end put to the custom. Accordingly, frying with anger, and growing fiercer, as I walked faster through Hyde Park to the palace, by thinking of the inconvenience, I was shown into the room where the Duke was sitting, and began immediately to deliver myself of my cogitations. He listened for a short time, and, before I had done, gave an exceedingly good-natured laugh at my remonstrance. It dissolved the spell; I saw at once my absurd violation of etiquette, and knew not where to look. But, with a kind of boyish playfulness, he good-humouredly admitted the justice of my complaint. After that time, he generally requested me to come at hours which he thought would be convenient.-With the exception of this final message, he was always very considerate. An early riser, the hour was of no importance to him.

I have also had occasion to be sensible of the affability of the Duke of York, on several particular occasions; quite often enough to justify a man in my station to be more than pleased. It will be recollected, that a public dinner was arranged in commemoration of George the Third, ostensibly, but really to get up subscription to defray the expense of a monumental group of sculpture. Nothing could be more flattering than the prospect; the Duke of York agreed to take the chair, and the whole clanjamphry of the court promised to attend. But, after all "this beauteous dawn," some of the back-stair gentry went to his Royal Highness, and remonstrated with him against countenancing such a subscription; the Duke, in consequence, determined not to go, which was, of course,

" A sign for all the courtiers to be sick."

It was evident, that every one who had taken an interest in

l cumescirincur
parance
le adgesthad
might
onsult

ately

con-

ed me
e, proimmeRolls,
f pubd, the
red on

with

by the g some sent a ock in , when llowed

thereof that bers of

ing me

the festival, stood on the imminent verge of ridicule. It could not be put off without great expense. I went to Lord Blessington, who was one of the stewards, and represented to him how we all stood. After much consideration, it was determined to try how we could work upon the Duke; so, accordingly, we walked to the Horse Guards together, and got his Royal Highness's promise to come, on condition that nothing should be said about the subscription. The dinner thus passed off "charmingly well," with all its constellations, and I dare say is remembered even to this hour; but the monumental group "lies mouldering in the clay," nor has the secret of the duke's coming to the barren feast, been, till now disclosed.

The Duke of York, like all the refined of the human race, had a very civilized regard for choice cookery. Once, at some Scottish feast, or dinner of the Highland Scciety, I was sitting opposite, when, with an air, the landlord placed before him a haggis, It was evidently ill made; the bag was dingy,—altogether an ugly, flabby, desultory trencherful of "fat things." The duke, alarmed at the apparition, cried to me, "Galt, what is that?" Fascinated at the sight, I could not resist the temptation, and replied gravely, "a boiled pair of bagpipes." Tell it not in Gath,—even at the risk of being reviled in Scotland for ever, his Royal Highness immediately ordered

'Great chieftain of the pudding race"

ignominiously away.*

^{*} Upon reflection, I think this was at a dinner, when a subscription was raised for erecting the monument to Burns on Doonside. By the by, this same dinner affords a curious example of what such sort of festivals are. It was chiefly got up by the late Sir Alexander Boswell, M.P. (the son of Johnson's Boswell,) and myself.

I have always had a great enjoyment in the mock solemnity of such occasions, particularly when a greenhorn happened to be among the stewards, and who thought all the "pride, pomp, and circumstance" of them, as seriously important as an installation, or any other of the fine things that make ambition virtue.

On the occasion of the Burns' dinner, Sir Alexander attended a meeting of the stewards a little earlier than the others; only himself and I were present, and he passed the time in rehearsing to me a song he had composed, and afterwards song at the dinner. The stewards being long of coming, he told me of

For the kind notice of the Duke of Sussex, I have now, in the course of a long period,—about seven and twenty years;—had frequently occasion to feel indebted. His Royal Highness has always treated me with the greatest condescension, invited me to dine with him at the palace, and to his conversations; but his uniform kindness has been more valued that even these distinctions.*

To the other members of the royal family, I am unknown; but the late king, when he read the Spaewife, was pleased to express a wish that the author should know it had given him much pleasure, and spoke to me on my first introduction at court; an honour, as I was told.

I mention these things, because the propriety of doing so has been suggested to me; at the same time, that I frankly confess, marks of distinction have been ever agreeable to me, but I have great doubts of having accomplished any thing deserving of notice. The man does not know himself, who is not constantly apprehensive lest he mistake, in his vanity, notoriety for reputation: the recognition of the privileged great of society is not of any value, without the consciousness of having done something to deserve it.

a meeting at Ayr, for raising the funds for the Monnment, where he was the Meeting, being himself the only person present, and, of course, in the chair; moving and seconding the different resolutions which were unanimously adopted. I inquired, if there were a vote of thanks, as customary, for his able conduct in the chair.

At the dinner alluded to, there was such a congregation of "dronthy neighbours," that they drank much more than the stewards' fund could afford, and would have made a large hole in the subscription, but the baconet and myself agreed that an attempt should be made to tax the stewards for an additional guinea. Much to their honour, this was all contributed; at least, very little was outstanding when I paid the amount of the subscription to Bailie Anld, of Ayr. The amiable Bailie presented me with a quaigh, made out of one of the rafters of Alloway kirk, for the trouble I took on the occasion, so much did he seem to take a personal interest in the proceeding. I wonder when men cause to be children: my eldest som when a Solomon of some three or four years old, remarked, very sagely, that "papa was the biggest boy he ever know." When first elected a director of the Highland Society, my old friend, General Stewart, of Garth, made me a present of a Celtic dress, and a magnificent plane of engle's feathers, and it was on the first occasion afterwards, when I played at Highlanders, that the boy, in serious admiration, said this.

l was l bewas ul of

It

Lord

ed to

s de ·

, ac-

got

t no-

nner

ions.

the

s the

now

race,

e, at

ed to d not air of

g reately

n was by, this tre. It inson's

h occads, and riously ambi-

ting of bresent, d afterl me of

^{*} Among the treasures of his princely library he possesses a vast collection of Bibles; but I know not how many now, thirteen hundred copies, it was said, of different collitions. Happening to mention this to my friend Mr. R. G., of Whitehill, near Glasgow,—to whom I am indebted for the story of the Entall,—"Ah," said he, "it's no better than Solomon's wives and concubines, vanity of vanities."

Vol II. S

CHAPTER XVI.

Conclusion.

The task I proposed to myself, when I undertook this work, is drawing to a close. I cannot prolong the termination without referring to incidents, in which the general reader can have little sympathy, and these I have hitherto studiously avoided; in those where perhaps the resolution to do so is not conspicuous I have yielded to constraint in order to vary the narrative, rather than to a disposition to talk complacently of things agreeable to myself. I hope this is obvious; if it be not so, that the blemish is not prominent;—at all events it is now too late to make any correction, for the printing and composition have gone on together, and I have only a few sentences more to say in conclusion.

There is a time of life when every man, in spite of himself, estimates his luck in the world. If he have been fortunate, he then becomes more arrogant, and if the reverse, he sighs in secret for some visible disaster, that, springing not from himself, may account to others for the pale cast of his reflections.

About the midsummer of 1832, I had a lively perception of having reached that period. My thoughts involuntarily reverted to the influential occurrences of my past life, and as often led me to conclude that my energies must have been unwisely directed, or that I had been pre-ordained to make many ineffectual efforts. Doubtless, self-esteem inclined me rather to blame the stars, than my own judgment.

One day, at this climacteric epoch, I felt myself unwell, and, returning home, sent for the doctor; soon after I was struck with paralysis, which greatly affected my left side.—
The stun, however, was as it may be called, not of long du-

ration, but the malady continued, and, from the time of that event, I have been an invalid.

As I had been much worse with a nervous complaint long ago, when I went to the Mediterranean, my spirits were not much depressed, and for several weeks, though lame, I did not despair of ultimate recovery. But I had soon reason to suspect that I was encouraging a new deceitful hope. Lady H. E. requested Sir Henry Halford to call on me, and although I had the most implicit confidence in my own medical friends, Dr. Anthony Todd Thompson, and Dr. M'Kellar, I inferred, from something which fell from them accidentally in conversation, that I was not beyond the reach of anotherstroke. Whether faith in his casual expression, inspired by his known attention to climacterical symptoms, or to his approval of my treatment, which did not answer my own wishes, had any effect on me, I know not, but from the period of his visit I inwardly doubted if I ever should recover; nor was this long a malady of the imagination. In the course of ten days or so after, I was awoke in the night by a strange noise in my ears, and the sensation as if something had gone wrong internally. I had been reading an account of Garrick's last illness sometime before, and my condition seemed much like what his had been, which his doctors pronounced mortal. Though there was an assurance in what I felt, that the catastrophe would not be immediate, I have yet had no reason to doubt that Death was "meddling" with my "inside."-However, he did not think fit to close his clutches, and I grew better: his intrusive fingers are, however, still there, -but he has hold of all men.

I seemingly speak of the event with levity, but really do not pretend to look on the King of Terrors with less awe than my neighbours; although apt at times, notwithstanding the strictness of my belief in predestination, to wince a little at the thought of having been sent into "this breathing world" to accomplish no purpose, but only to endure "the ills that flesh is heir to," and to ponder why the human faculties cannot

rk, is with-can ously is not ry the atly of

it be

ents it

ig and

imself,
forturse, he

of his

ception
intarily
ife, and
we been
to make
ined me

unwell, er I was t side. long dualways discern the goodness which may be in the tendencies of Providence.

But to conclude: one morning, in going to the city, I was taken very unwell, with a great confusion in my head, and was compelled, in consequence, to ask for a glass of water, in a shop in St. Paul's Church Yard, to prevent me from fainting. Revived by the draught, I got close to Bow Church, when, again becoming ill, but again recovering, I took a coach to the office. Feeling, however, my indisposition increase, I went home, and sent for the doctor. About a couple of hours after, I was instantaneously smitten by another violent stroke of paralysis, which deprived me of the power of my right side, and greatly increased the existing weakness of the left leg, rendering me unable to turn in bed unassisted.

I did not, for some time, expect that I was ever again to be abroad, but with treatment which must be considered to have been skilful, I have recovered some use of my limbs, and can write legibly, though slowly; but what purpose can be served by concealing from myself, the valetudinarian—the sheer hulk—I have become. A man who has suffered many strokes of paralysis, three of them very severe, has received nothing to be proud of; and yet, odd as it may seem, there is consolation in the calamity. No one can doubt, that I am justified in reckoning myself among the unfortunate.

N. B. 4th September, 1833.—Lord Bacon somewhere says, that if a man can only wait, he will generally attain his ends. A striking instance of the wisdom of this maxim has been shewn to me since this final sheet has been sent to press.

Within these three days, I have received information, that nearly the capital sum of all my secured debts has been paid; but it has been at a sad sacrifice—those, of course, for which no security was granted, do not yet participate, but about ten shillings in the pound, on the amount of all I owe, has been already paid, some of the debts in full, with interest.

The reader will, I hope, also rejoice with me, on learning that my plans for the improvement of Upper Canada are authorized, in a great measure, to be renewed. The immigration, which it was the purpose of these plans to attract, had subsided, and the effect must soon have been felt by the Canada Company; indeed, I cannot conceive how that class of persons, of whom emigrants chiefly consist, could be supposed to people the forests, if they did not find employment there.

I have likewise to acknowledge, as a favour, that the Directors of the Company have recommended my second son to be received into their service in the province.

But, although in making this postcript, I have inexpressible pleasure, there is nothing to induce me to desire any thing in the narrative to be changed. The fact, of the Canada Company being one of the most flourishing concerns in London, is the vindication of my scheme and plans. In little more than one year, the shareholders have made above four hundred thousand pounds, a consideration that allays my sense of disappointments and ruin; but still, I claim the privilege of humanity.—The victim of that recklessness of consequences, to which the decisions of public bodies are ever liable, but yields to the weakness of his nature, when he regards the causes of suffering as crimes.

I have since received from the Earl of Dalhousie the following letter, which, while it is very gratifying to me, shows that, perhaps, the Canada Company were less to blame for the treatment with which they have rewarded me, than I have supposed. I, therefore, give it entire, both for their sake and my own. Possibly, intensity of feeling may warp one's judgment, but I can have no wish to misrepresent any fact; and, in the preceding narrative, I believe myself to have indulged in no exaggeration.

S 24

cies

was
and
iter,
from
rch,
k a
inuple

· vi-

er of

ness
sted.
to be
have
l can

erved sheer rokes ing to lation ed in

says, ends.

es.

n, that
paid;
which
about
has

" Dalhousie Castle, 31 Aug. 1833.

" MY DEAR SIR,

"I do feel, and ever shall feel, the warmest interest in the welfare of that country in which I spent nearly ten years of the happiest days in my life. I sincerely rejoice to learn, by your letter, that the Lower Canada Land Company has closed a bargain with Government for the purchase of large tracts of land. Experience in settling the Canadas has long proved, that to give free grants is not the wisest system to advance the interests either of the emigrant or of the province. A man who purchases his land, will proceed to obtain the return for his money more incustriously, than one who gets land for nothing—the one system of settlement encourages industry, the other idleness—so, at least, we have seen a almost invariably.

Your Company has now brought a powerful machinery to work for the public good, as well as their own; an energy which the Government was not able to create. I wish you success with a larry heart. You have given proof of its effects in Upper Canada, to admit of no doubt of its influence elsewhere.

"When in Canada, I did doubt your success, because I doubted the Company would persevere in so great an outlay as was then proposed; but I only rejoice the more now, in the success of their perseverance. Allow me to repeat my cordial wishes that the Canadas and the Company may equally benefit in the great undertaking.

eth in the great undertaking.

"My physicians have banished me (not fourteen years) to Nice, during this approaching winter; but in my own mind, if scotland won't do for me, I much doubt any other climate will do better. Wherever I go, I shall always entertain that esteem and vegard for you, which began and grew in our acquaintance in canada; and in these feelings always believe me to remain

"Faithfully yours,

"DALHOUSIE."

"John Galt, Esq.

While this sheet was at press, and I expected to conclude my narrative with something less dolorous than many parts of it, I was struck with another shock that has rendered my sight ineffectual; thus maintaining the uniformity of my fate in a singular manner. However, I am something like a cat that I was at the drowning of in my boyish years:—a country carter, who looked over my shoulder at the sight, on seeing the poor animal, remarked on the catastrophe, that it would "take pains to kill her."

END OF AUTOBIOGRAPHY.

APPENDIX.

OUTLINE OF A PLAN

For a gradual Assimilation of the Currency of the North AMERICAN PROVINCES with that of the United Kingdom

1. The deplorable effects constantly arising from the insecurity and fluctuating value of the means hitherto employed in mercantile remittances, demonstrate that some other medium, than specie or bills of exchange, is requisite, independent of merchandize, for the dealings of the commercial world.

2. The desideratum would be supplied were an establishment formed which would be to commercial nations what the Bank of England, by its branches, is

becoming to England.

3. The stability, the character of the Bank of England, and its identification directly or indirectly, with all the money interests of the British empire, clearly point it out as an establishment which, as far as the United Kingdom and her Colonies are concerned, might be easily adapted to the purpose in view; while ultimately it would become the heart to the circulating medium of the whole commercial world

4. But the object in view is too vast to be accomplished at once; the way should be gradually opened and experience should regulate the adaption : on his account it is suggested that the two Canadas be chosen as the field of the

first experiment, and for these reasons:

5 1st, The attempt to introduce a metallic currency has failed; 2d, the circulating medium of both provinces is paper; 3d, British coin is never seen, and, except among the Canadians below Quebec, rurely a silver dollar; 4th, and, except among the Canadians below Quenec, rarely a saver doner, and, the Banks offer but local accommodation: their paper is at a discount in the State of New York. It is, therefore, desirable, since paper must be the circulating medium, for specie cannot swim so near the engrossing gulfs of the American paper circulation, that a better class of responsible paper should be introduced, of a kind and character that would be likely to preserve itself at par.

6. But the gradual substitution, of a better class of paper in the Canadas would effect comparatively but little good, unless the notes could be made a medium of remittance, and be rendered objects of trade for that purpose, to the neighbouring American merchants: nor does this seem difficult.

7. Let the Bank of Engand send to agents in the two provinces, notes of all descriptions above one pound payable in London like the existing post bills.

8. Let the agents be instructed to dispose of these notes,—let, by supplying the Commissariats and the local Governments;—2d, by purchasing mercantile Bills of Exchange;—3d, by exchanging them for the notes of the Provincial, and particularly of the American, Banks. The discretion of Discounting, or of ordinary Banking might afterwards be extended to the agents but in the first instance this does not appear to be expedient.

9. Agents should be appointed for Quebec, Montreal, Kingston, and York, and should be subordinate to a Superintendent. They should render a statement to the Superintendent weekly, and he should transmit a monthly abstract

to the Bank in London.

10. The system should be so constructed as to obviate risk to the Bank; the agents, as treasurers, should give security; the notes should require the sig-

ng this me, 1 all alin our emain

that life. Land

large at to er of oceed gets e oth-

r the as not

proof where.

Com Lonly

to rev ben-

clude parts ed my y fate a cat counn see-

would

nature of the different agents before being issued in the Canadas, and the notes unsigned should remain with the Superintendent until the agents required a supply; the supply, with the amount in their hands, should not be allowed to

exceed the amount of their respective securities.
11. On the details of the system here proposed, it is unnecessary to enter, but the probable effects would seem likely to be these:-Bank of England notes would acquire an ascendency over other paper, not only in the provinces, but in the neighbouring states; they would be brought up for remittances to England, perhaps to Europe in general; they would draw into the hands of the agents the notes of other Banks, both Canadian and American, and thus give the Superintendent command over the bullion and specie, in the coffers of these Banks. The only risk to the Bank of England, would be in the mercantile Bills purchased, but which, by regulations of easy formation, might be almost entirely obviated; in every other respect the business would be safe, profitable, and of incalculable political linduence to the British government. Ist, that government would pay to the Bank in London the monies wanted for the public service in the Canadas, which payments could meet the notes is sued by the agents to the Commissariats and to the local governments; 2d, the remittance of the mercantile Bills would meet the issues made for them : and, 3d, by means of the notes of other Banks, the Superintendent would always have it in his power to remit specie and bullion for notes sold or exchanged for the notes of other Banks; moreover, it is probable, that the paper of the Bank of England would aiways be at a premium.

Gueiph, U. C. 22d Feb. 1828.

"A MYSTERY—FOR THE BYRON CRITICS.

"To the Editor of the Monthly Magazine.

"The receipt of the following note, from my friend, Mr. Galt, has occasioned my going, with some pains, into the subject referred to; and the following paper, as the result, may perhaps interest the admirers of Byron's genius. I give you the whole as it stands, for obvious reasons.

Barn Cottage, Saturday.

DEAR P.,

'The other night Mrs. Thomas Sheridan told me, at Lady Cork's, that if I would look into an old romance, called 'The Three Brothers,' written by one Pickersgill, I should be surprised at the use Lord Byron had made of it, especially in his 'Deformed Transformed.' I have since had the book, and really the coincidences are very wonderful, for he seems also to have borrowreally the comentences are very wondering to the idea of 'Manfred'—even the name—from it, a drama which I have ever regarded as the most original of his works. But I have only skimmed the romance;—look at it, andtell me what you think of it with reference to Byron who seems to have derived the singular hue of the gloom for which he is so distinguished, from this atrocious, but curious novel.

' Your's truly, 'J. G.'

P. S.-Who can this Pickersgill be? Is it possible that our friend, the Academician, was the intellectual father of Byron? You know how much of late he has been addicted to Greek girls, and other piratical gentry of his lordship's acquaintance.

"Every thing regarding Byron and his productions is interesting, so as soon as possible I sat down to the book. Nothing but the curiosity with which the above communication had impressed me, and the request of my respected friend, could have induced me to wade through four volumes of high romance

ed to
, but
notes
, but
notes
, but
engthe
give
s of
mcrht be,
safe,
hent,
heted
es'isl, the
hem:
vonid

r ex-

notes ed a

occallownius.

ay.

hat if
by
t, es, and
rowever
d the
yron
is so

, the nuch f his

the cted ince

-wild, though powerful in conception, and often extravagant in languageas this production is, and belonging altogether to a school now most properly extinct. But a reader, at all conversant with Byrou's poetry, who should undertake the same labour, would hardly fail to be surprized by the similarity in the mode of thinking, and the taste as to subjects and sentiments, between this obscure author and the noble bard. So apparent is this in reading the remance, and so little merit is there in the discovery, either on the part of Mrs. Sheridan, Mr. Galt. or myself, that on turning to the title-page of the fourth volume, I was much amused to find it confirmed by some anonymous reader with whose name I regret that I am unable to favour the world. In short, one of those circulating-library literati, who display their critical talents by making pencil annotations on all works honoured by their perusal, has, besides other notes through the course of the copy that I obtained from the library, under-written the words, 'Joshua Picker-gill, Esq., 'on the title page, as follows:— 'No such name ever heard of—Quere? can this be a boyish production of Lord Byron!' I have ascertained that the romance was written by a Joshun Pickersgill. Of the other part of the note my reader may make what use he pleases.

"As the discovering of plaglarisms, real or supposed, however, is a labour the accordant with either my taste or feelings, I prefer, at least in the first instance, referring to those passages in the romance, which, having a remarkable application to his own case and dispositions, were calculated to make a strong impression upon the ardent mind of the noble poet. The principal character in, 'The Three Brothers,' is a wayward and high-spirited youth, the son of a man of bad passions and most questionable morals, (vide Byron's father,) and born under circumstances of melancholy and mystic resage as to his fate in life. The boy is beautiful both in face and person, and 'his constitution was so instinct with love, that he almost was insensible to an inferior feeling for womankind, and when his eighth year was yet incomplete he affected and amazed his auditors with the inimitable tenderness of his reply to a young lady, who, amusing herself with him, inquired of him what it was to love, answered, "It is to die in yourself, to live in another." '-(Vol. iv. p. 254.) By an accident, when with his parents previous to this, the boy's spine is broken, and he is at the same time wounded in the shoulder by a ball from a pistol, which causes a deformity in the back. This misfortune, by destroying the beauty of his form and making him remarkable, and often an object of ridicule to companions, otherwise his interiors, sours his disposition, as well as disappoints his romantic fancies, until becoming the mental slave of his unsightly hump, he begins to regard it as the grand cause of all the miseries which he is destined to suffer, and the bitter occasion of incessant self-con-The power with which the author of the romance unfolds and illustrates the consequences of this deformity, need not be here dwelt upon; but when we know how excessively sensitive Byron was all his life, upon the subject of his misshapen foot-how bitterly, and probably unforgivingly, he brooded over the unreasonable and unfeeling taunt of his mother upon the subject—and how this personal deformity, slight as it was, made him remarkable among his-companions, and became connected afterwards with the one great disappointment of his life-we may have some idea of the impression, that every thing in these volumes would make upon a mind like his, narrating as it does so many circumstances and evolving so many feelings, which spoke so home to his experience. When we further reflect, that he regarded his early disappointment concerning Miss Chaworth, as the great event which had not only shaped his after life to misfortune and suffering, but which had, in some sense, disturbed his faculties, (Moore, vol. ii p. 790, notes,) we shall see of what importance the impressions given by this congenial romance may have been, in forming the tone if not the conceptions, of his maturer mind. The manner in which Byron afterwards speaks of Miss Chaworth's refusal of him, and marriage with another, is most affecting. 'A marriage,' he says, 'for which he sacrificed the prospects of two very ancient families, and a heart which was her's from ten years old, and a head which has never, here quite right since.'—(ib.) And to what does he in his own 'Memoranda' ascribe this irremediable disappointment? It will be recollected that, in his delightful intercourse with this young lady, there were constant dances in the evening at Watlock in which heigh graphly to join or recount of his terms of the beat at Matlock, in which, being unable to join on account of his lame foot, he had

the pain of being obliged to sit looking on, 'solitary and mortified,' while his idol was handed sound caressingly by another. He afterwards had the further pain to understand fully that he had no share in her heart. 'One of the most painful of those humiliations,' says Mr. Moore, 'to which the defect in his foot had exposed him, must have let the truth in, with dreadful certainty, upon his heart. He was either told of or overheard Miss Chaworth saying to her maid, "Do you think I could care anything for that lame boy?" This speech, as he himself describes it, was like a shot through his heart.— Though fate at night when he heard it, he instantly darted out of the house, and scarcely knowing whither he ran, never stopped till he found him-

self at Newstead—'(Vol. 1. p. 56.)
"It is not for persons of ordinary sensibility to conceive what a mind like Byron's must have suffered during all this, or how he must have been impressed at that age with every thought and sentiment in a story, in so many respects similar to his own. For Arnaud, in this novel, with the constitutional instincts' already alluded to, had also, forgetting his hump, become intensely enamoured of the pretty Camilla; but, to his deep mortification, she rejected his admiration in favour of his half-brother, Lewis. Circumstances call the latter away, and thus proceeds the tale :- On the morning of their departure, Arnand secretly followed Lewis to a knoll, pleasantly shaded by tail pines, where Camilia usually could be found at her diversions. The tears, the two latter shed at separation, fell like oil on Arnaud's passions, which were fermented to the crisis of outrage, when, to some jealous remark from Lewis, Camilla earnestly replied, "Indeed! indeed | I can't fancy him, he has so ugly a shoulder!" These words burnt to Arnaud's heart worse than a venomed javelin, &c.—(Vol. iv. p 256.)

"This polynantly felt circumstance, together with the gradual dislike to him of his own parents, and the avoidance and ridicule of his youthful companions rankled in the sensitive mind of the boy, and is represented to have stirred up the deepest feelings connected with his strong and wayward passions. Speaking of the parents of Arnaud, it is said—The bitterest consciousness of his deformity was derived from their indelicate, though, perhaps, insensible alteration of conduct; and those colpabilities which before they had nourished in him as the eccentricities of a bold spirit, they now consured and condemned—(P. 250.) All this, together with the tantalizing jealonsy of his brother, who had won the love of Camilla, and his constantly being reminded of his misfortune, not only by the ill-concealed sneers of his own comrades and his father's servants, but by his very shadow on the wall, or his image reflected in the clear bosom of the pool, wrought upon his mind until he cursed the voice of the people, who in general derided him, not as 'the voice of God,' but rather as the croaking of a demon;—spoke of his own person as 'his abbor rent enemy,' adding, that 'his shoulder depended like a millstone on him to sink him down to hell.' 'Yet would he decry the slightest allusion to it in another, and so sickly was his sensibility in that particular, that he wished the terms hunch and crookedness could be abolished from language and memory, -(lb. p. 261.)

"Though a lame or club-foot is a much less staring deformity than a hump on the shoulder, yet the impression that this parrative and all its adjuncts made on the mind of the youthful poet, pniming as it did, in exaggerated colors and strong language, what he must himself have felt so deeply, and at a period of life when they were appreciated with all the peignancy, (the 'Brothers' was published in 1803, when Byron was fifteen,) is evident not only from his attemptng to dramatize the incident many years after, under the title of the 'The Deformed Transformed.' but from many other circumstances, both in my own life and writings, which can only be perceived by a study as well of those as of the strange production now referred to. The novel goes on to narrate, that the reformed, under the influence of bitter feelings and implous sentiments, occasioned by his misfortune, utters curses against Heaven, and maledictions on himself, so appaling that together with a species of mystic knowledge of which he had become master, the Evil One rises at his call, and, amidst an awful, yet sublime phantasmagoria conjured up in a cave, succeeds in transforming the deformed into a noble shape of his own choosing, in which he many years walks the earth; and, not happier than he was before, nithough feared and respected wherever he goes, he works out that guilt, and consummates that vengeance upon his own father, which gratifies his indomitable pride, and li-lustrates the dread misanthropic grandeur of his nature. I should not have dwelt so long upon this point, did it not in my mind afford so many suggestions to the tracing of Byron's early impressions, and also as clearing the way for, whatever observations, respecting the originality of 'Manfred,' the perusal of the 'Brothers' enables me to make. Before we have done with the 'Deformed,' however, it may be observed, that the author of the romance having given the most natural, and consequently most powerful circumstances and reflections incident to the situation, and thus in some sort exhausted the subject, nothing could have induced Byron after this to attempt it, but his own deep impressions and feelings of its interests—knowing, as he must have done, that he could add little to it without such plagiarism as it was not likely a mind like his would submit to. Accordingly his drama, though somewhat more rationalized in its execution, (if one can use such a term.) from the conception of the romance, its, with all its vigour of expression, much inferior to the sublime mysticism of the original, as well as losing, as before observed, the best part of the adjuncts.

"As to the story of 'Manfred' in this romance, it is incidentally introduced in the fourth volume, under the title of 'The Guilt of Friendship' to illustrate a case of hypothetical guilt; or rather by an inverted case, and a sophistical argument about friendship and love, to attempt an excuse for a vite commerce under both of these appellations, consisting of an imaginary mixture of fratricide and friendship, and a real one of incest and adultery too abominable to be here detailed. Whether Byron is indebted to this romance in general, or the tale of 'Manfred' in particular for the original conception which induced the construction of his remarkable dramatic poem of that name, must be gathered rather from the general characteristics of the story, and such incidents as we shall mention, than from the short tale of 'The Guilt of Friendship' itself.

"The great point, both of interest in the character of 'Manfred,' as well as

"The great point, both of interest in the character of 'Manfred,' as well as that of that originality in conception, for which Mr.Galt, in common with the world gives the poet credit in his being invested with a mysterious guilt, which by some dread act he lins incurred, but which has also given him power over the spirits of the invisible world, while it causes him such misery as to make him eagerly seek the waters of Lethe, or to desire anxiously a deliverance from existence. What this guilt consists of, is the question; and that Byron had discovered any novel species of it may well be doubted. If the attention of the inquirer is led to the present romance, with a view to any known species of guilt, there is certainly no lack of it in these volumes, and the reader or the poet has only to take his choice from among its wild and revolting pictures. If, however, as Mr. Galt, with much ingenuity, argues, the 'deed without a name,' is meant to consist of the immolation of a human sacrifice to the infernal powers, and that of a person beloved by the horrid fratricide,—such as might be Manfred's sister, Astrite,—as is said to be done by the students of the black art—the performance we are speaking of will be found to supply the hint as this also; for in a mysterious vault scene, (vol.iii. p. 240,) we have an intruder into the dark spot, where he finds the body of a man coiled up in a corner, transfixed 'in the eminence of horror, as the recollection started in him, that a human carcase is an ingredient essential to some magical composition.'

"Considering the amazing beauty and power of Byron's drama any mention of these coincidences is only, meant for further illustration of the impression which the romance before us seems to have made on his youthful mind. Another or two, are, perhaps, yet more remarkable. The burden of Manfred's regret, is his implous and self-destructive thirst after knowledge, which has led him, in the prosecution of his inquiries, to intrude too far into the hidden mysteries of things. His opening speech, accordingly, contains these senti-

menta:-

is

Ct Il-

y.,

10

ke 25esnal ely

ted

he

re,

WO

er-

ie,

gly

ned

ons up ak-

his

al-

hed ned her, his l bis d in oice

rahor

u to

it in

ory,

amp

ncis

lors

riod

was mpt-

De-

own as of

t the

cca-

s on bich

vful,

mlag

and

'Sorrow is knowledge; they who know the most Must mourn the deepest o'er the fatal truth— The tree of knowledge is not that of life.'

And further on-

^{&#}x27;Knowledge is not happiness,' &c.

In short, the sentiment, in various forms, runs through the whole drama. So also here, in Three, Brothers, '(vol. iv. p. 349-50,) we find the restless and discontented Arnaud, who has, as well as Manfred, been dealing with the powers of the invisible world, lamenting thus—'Wisdom, unjoyous, broke the wholesome current of my blood,' &c. 'Perdition lay before me,' he adds, almos in the words put into the mouth of Manfred,—'unavoidable hy retrogression, for truly I felt that never would the fiend have gratified my desire of such wisdom, could it be used to aid my deliverance from him. So conditioned, I lamented the exchange of folly for wisdom, &c. But further—' Now do I perceive that much of wisdom is much of woe, and that

ther—' Now do I perceive that much of wisdom is much of woe, and thus to pass through this world, certain emotions are necessary to the heart, as certain languages are to the tongue. Wisely hast thou resolved in decil ning complete wisdom—to me 'tis torturous,' &c.

"But there are more of these coincidences in this romance, both reminding the reader of other incidents in Manfred,' and of many parts of the poet's after productions. Manfred is seated among the sublime solitudes of the Alps; Arnaud, otherwise Julian, (for Manfred in this romance is merely suppositious,) is also among the precipices of the Swiss mountains. Manfred, in his eagerness to rid himself of existence, is about to leap into an about beneath him, when his bound is prevented by the accidental presence of a chamois hunter. Arnaud is also arrested, when about to make a sim . ilar leap, (vol. iv. p. 336,) by the sudden interference of his faithful dog, who, unseen until the moment, pulls the unhappy meditator of suicide by the skirts. Manfred, however, does not exceed Arnaud in cager desire for death; for the latter, in the wildness of his disappointment, in being prevented from his aim, tosses he fui hful animal high in nir, until It is dashed to fragments among the rocks; and when the creature is immolated to his fury, he moralizes over its reeking curraits, on organization, life, sense, and sentiment, in a style that irresistibly collates in the reader's mind, with Byron's well-known reflections on a human skull in his great poem of 'Childe Harold.

"Whether the indescribable figure that appears of Manfred, (but to his sense alone,) while the Abbot is present with him in the last scene of the drama, may have been suggested by the tremendous apparition of the murdered Gervase in this romance, which more than once (vol. iii. pp. 216, 223, and vol. iv. p. 201, &c.) comes in the shape of 'an indistinct something,'—a figure so horrible, that he who saw it, stood with 'checks pallid with terror, and eyes half unsocketed by intenseness of gaze,' it is probably not worth while to inquire. But when we read the unhappy Armaid's apos-troplie to the manes of his faithful dog, and hear him saying after the rash act—' By my soul we are fellows of the same nature, nor can any distinction of exterior shape justify the caprice or cruelty that slayeth thee; may, there is a vice of ingratitude in it, for thou art knit to me by an attachment that doth me daily service : thou humourest my humours, adoptest my instructions, and exchangest thine own nature for mine, &c.,—the whole tone, as well as the thoughts, are irresistibly compared in the reader's mind with Byron's beautiful epitaph on his Newfoundland canine companion, and with the affecting allusions, he at various times makes, to that true and tried

"To pursue these coincidences much further would be tedious, and might become funciful and unjust. In them all, we see the great poet, the discriminating and the intense mind, at least refining and rationalizing the crude, though grand, conceptions, of unother poetical, but ill trained intellect, which seems not to have under stood his own power—and which, though remarkably similar to Byron's, certainly had not a tithe of his chastened good taste. Hence the sentiments and conceptions in these volumes, may have strongly commended themselves to the poet's mental constitution; but they are in general ill brought out, and often so wild, that they can only have their effect on minds, more or less, like his own. Many examples might be given of this, but one may suffice. I have already quoted the answer of the deformed here to the young lady who asked him what it was to love; namely, that 'it is to die in yourself, to live in another'. Now mark how Byron, in The Dream, expresses and amplifies this beautiful sentiment, in reference to the breathing light of his youth, and the dark cloud of his manhood—Miss Chaworth :-

'He had no breath, no being but in her's; She was his voice: he did not speak to her, But trembled on her words; she was his sight, For his eve followed her's, and saw with her's, Which coloured all his objects ;-he had ceased To live within himself; she was his life, The ocean to the river of his thoughts, Which terminated all.

" I might further pursue this subject, by referring to this formance, (voi. iv. p. 11.) for those well known sentiments of Byton upon that dublous matto, p. 11.) for those well known sentiments of pyron upon that alloids fact, a woman's age; to the beginning of the tale of Manfred already alluded to, (ib. p. 145. &c.) for many of those original sentiments, regarding friendship, scattered through the writings of the noble poet. I might also add, that ff Byron has given us a vigorous picture of a Venetian conspiracy in 'Marino Fallero'—of a siege (Colinth)—of a guilty and sad being, giving a long history of himself in confession to a priest, (the Ginour,) we have similar incidents, and much more, in the wild production before me; but I prefer closing this paper with an extract in regard to character, of which the reader, meditating on that of the noble poet, will, of course, form his own judgment. Before going further, however, it may be necessary to sny, that no man of correct feeling would put this romance into the hands of those for

whose morals they had any solicitude. But to the illustration.

" Mr. Galt inquires whether the tone and sentiments; in this romance, may not have furnished the ideas of that gloom which pervades all Byron's writings, and is the chief feature which distinguishes his sentiments from those of most former poets. If it be true, as Moore intimates, that 'wrongs and sufferings' (real or funcied) 'were through life the main sources of Byron's inspirations'—and if 'to this one great object of displaying power, every other duty was but too likely to be sacrificed,' (vol. ii. p. 784),—and if, as both his blographers seem to intimate, Byron, in reference to the public, bore somewhat of a double character, nothing appears more likely—considering his early impressions from this romance, of which we have already spoken. The long description of Arnaud's character here, it is impossible to read without thinking of the character of Byron, or, at least, of that one which he has drawn to the view of the world-so strange a mixture of tenderness, and something not so amlable, that it is little wonder his biographers should not have fully understood it, when he understood it not himself. But attend to the romance, (vol. iv. pp. 252, 273, 275.) In Arnaud's early life, 'when his mother observed to him how long his eyelashes latterly were grown, he replied, in tones that melted the words—" Alas! no wonder for I have watered them much of late." The looks and gestures that accompanied these kinds of speech, denoted their origin in a heart, that would not suffer others to think it contented with the case in which it was; that likewise was too proud to permit their plty, which it prevented by shewing that it would not pity itself .-Of follies he was not more abundant (than other men.) for his brain was stronger in wisdom, than his heart in virtue. Some follies he cultivated, because he esteemed them accessary to human happiness; but he failed in his design, for his mode of bringing them into play, raised them to the detestable eminence of vices. Yet one folly, egotism, was virtuous, Insomuch that it re-vealed his vices. He was a delightful and sublime instrument, wherefrom the instinctive note converses musically or dissonantly, according as it is struck. When skill and tenderness might have sounded him through the ravishing compass of harmony, ignorance, and rudeness, provoked from him a din of discord; and what so harsh as music in despair?

"Your's, with respect,

" A. P."

na. ess the oka he hv niy im. lur-

hat art, clus. indthe ere. lan.

an ence im vho, the nth; from fragnry. and

Byhis the mur-216, omeallid ably aposrash ction there that ions. well

By-

with tried aight dis ude, lect, reboog ave thev have giv-

iely, , in

Mise

